Ali: The Best of the Sahabah
‘Ali: The Best of the Sahabah

Toyib Olawuyi

Al-Islam.org

Sub Title:
Explicit Testimonies of Sahih Sunni Ahadith

Author(s):

Toyib Olawuyi [1]

This book is an in-depth academic critique, and a thoroughly investigative refutation, of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s Minhaj al-Sunnah on the specific question of Abu Bakr’s alleged superiority over Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib. The shaykh has adopted a two-pronged approach in his Minhaj. He presents arguments and proofs to support Abu Bakr’s superiority and discredits all arguments and proofs in favour of ‘Ali’s superiority. Toyib Olawuyi has however placed all the primary submissions, evidences and denials of Ibn Taymiyyah under the microscope and punctured every single one of them severely using the Book of Allah, the sahih ahadith of the Ahl al-Sunnah wa al-Jama‘ah, and their strictest rijal verification methods. Full transparency, accuracy and accountability are strictly observed throughout our book, and we hope it will ease the way for every soul seeking to find out the real truth.


Topic Tags:

Sahaba (Companions) [5]
Sunni–Shi’a [6]

Person Tags:

Imam Ali [7]

Dedication

This research is dedicated to Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib, salawatullah wa salamuhu ‘alaihi, who is my mawla and the mawla of all believers.

Acknowledgments

Special thanks to the following brothers and sisters for their encouragement: Shaykh Muhammad Nura Dass, Ahmad Olawuyi, Ali Baker, Tural Islam, Syed Jarry Haider, Syed Mansab Ali Jafri, Jaffer Abbas, Agbonika Salihu, Jibreel Ibn Mikael, Syeda Umme Rabab Bukhari, Aneela Sultan, Nasir Hasan, and Hassan Bokhari. May Allah bless them all and all our loving brothers and sisters from the Shi’ah
Preface

The question of who the best of the Sahabah, 
radhiyallah ‘anhum, was has always been a thorny issue within the Ummah, especially among the Ahl al-Sunnah wa al-Jama’ah. Even the Sahabah disputed with one another over the topic. Specifically, the debate often revolves around Abu Bakr and ‘Ali, alaihi al-salam, only. It is very difficult to see anyone – whether Sunni or Shi‘i – arguing that ‘Umar, Uthman, Talhah, Zubayr or some other Sahabi – was the best of the Sahabah. Rather, the exact point of contention is, and always was: was Abu Bakr their best or ‘Ali?

Expectedly, most of the Ahl al-Sunnah consider Abu Bakr to have been the best of the Sahabah, then ‘Umar, then ‘Uthman, and then ‘Ali. By contrast, the Shi‘ah believe that Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali was the best, then al-Hasan, then al-Husayn, and then Sayyidah Fa‘īmah, alaihim al-salam. There is a minority among Sunnis – including some Sahabah and a lot of Sufis – who share the Shi‘i view on the matter.

Ordinarily, the debate over who was the best should have been a mere, healthy academic exercise. However, it is linked with Imamah and khilafah in the Ummah. So, it is a very big issue, and provokes the deepest emotions of some people. In fact, countless Shi‘is and others have been murdered for more than a millennium by Sunni extremists, only for their belief in the superiority of ‘Ali. The best of the Ummah at each point in time is the only one qualified for the khilafah. This is the Command of Allah and His Messenger, sallallahu ‘alai waihi. Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) confirms:

في هذا الخبر إخبار عمر بين المهاجرين والأنصار أن أي кто يكر سيد المسلمين وخيرهم وأحبهم إلى رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم ذلك علة مبايعته فقال بن تيمية أنتم فأت فأتن سيدنا وخيرنا وأحبنا إلى رسول لله صلى الله عليه وسلم ليبيين بذلك أن الأمر به تولية الأفضل وأن أفضلنا فتايعك

In this report is the declaration of ‘Umar among the Muhajirun and the Ansar that Abu Bakr was the sayyid of the Muslims and the best of them, and the most beloved of them to the Messenger of Allah. This is the reason for following him. So, he (‘Umar) said, “Rather, we will follow you because you are our sayyid, and the best of us, and the most beloved of us to the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him”.

He wanted to make clear through it that: WHAT IS ORDAINED IS TO GIVE AUTHORITY TO THE BEST, and you are the best of us. So, we will follow you.1

The bottomline here is that khilafah by anyone who is not the best of his time is contrary to the Order of Allah and the Sunnah of His Messenger, and is therefore both illegal and a bid’ah. That makes the
Khalifah himself and all his supporters ringleaders of a bid‘ah, as long as they are aware of his deficiency and still uphold his khilafah. In that way, they would be guilty of creating a new provision in the religion to supplant that of Allah. The grave danger of all this is captured perfectly in these words of the Messenger of Allah, documented by Imam al–Nasai (d. 303 H):

The worst of the (religious) affairs are their innovations, and every innovation is a bid‘ah, and every bid‘ah is misguidance, and every misguidance ends to the Fire.²

‘Allamah al–Albani (d. 1420 H) comments:

 صحيح

Sahih³

The Command of Allah and His Messenger is that the best of the Ummah should always be their khilafah, as testified by ‘Umar b. al–Khāṭīb. Meanwhile, the innovation in this matter is to make or allow any inferior individual as the khilafah. This innovation is a bid‘ah, and will land whosoever leads, practices or recognizes it in Hellfire. It is understandable then why some of our Sunni brothers are so hell–bent upon emphasizing the superiority over Abu Bakr over the whole Ummah, followed by ‘Umar and ‘Uthman, by all means – even to the extent of committing massacres. The survival of their madhhab depends very heavily on it. Should Abu Bakr, ‘Umar or ‘Uthman fall, Sunnism itself ceases to exist as a valid entity!

So, certain drastic steps were taken to address the challenge. First, a very wide re–definition was issued for Shi‘ism. This, apparently, was to scare Sunnis away from researching into the issue. Al–Hafiz Ibn Hajar al–‘Asqalani (d. 852 H) takes the podium:

وإﻻ تشيع محبة على وتقديمه على الصحابة فمن قدمه على أبي بكر وعمر فهو غال في تشيعه ويطلق عليه رافضي وإلا فشيئي فإن اضف إلى ذلك السب أو التصريح بالبغض فغال في الفضل وإن اعتقد الرجعة إلى الدنيا فأشاد في الغلظ

Shi‘ism is love of ‘Ali and the placing of him over the Sahabah (except Abu Bakr and ‘Umar only). Whoever places him above Abu Bakr and ‘Umar, such is an extremist in his Shi‘ism, and he is called a Rafidi.

If he does not (place ‘Ali over the two), then he is only a Shi‘i. If he added to that (i.e. preference of ‘Ali over Abu Bakr and ‘Umar) abuse, cursing or open hatred (of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar), he is then an
extremist in Rafidh. If he believes in Raj’ah into this world, then he is severe in (Rafidhi) extremism. Therefore, a Sunni is only someone who considers ‘Ali as inferior to Abu Bakr, ‘Umar AND ‘Uthman. Whosoever places him above ‘Uthman is a Shi’i, and whosoever views him as superior to Abu Bakr or ‘Umar is a Rafidhi. In the Sunni creed, being a Shi’i is a bid’ah. Imam al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) says:

ان البدعة على ضربين: فبدعة صغيرة كغلول التشيع، أو كتشييع بلا غلول ولا تحريف، فهذا كثير في التابعين وتابعيهم

Bid’ah has two types:

The minor bid’ah: like extreme Shi’ism, or like moderate Shi’ism, for this was widespread among the Tabi’in and their followers, despite their devotion, piety and truthfulness. If the ahadith of these people were rejected, part of teachings of the Prophet would be lost, and that would be a clear evil.

Then the major bid’ah: like complete rafdh and extremism in it.

By classifying the placing of ‘Ali above ‘Uthman as a bid’ah – which leads to Hellfire – the classical Sunni ‘ulama hoped to put a firm lid on all threats to their madhhab. However, their action has produced some horrible unintended consequences. Many of the Sahabah were Rawafidh by Sunni definition, and therefore heretics who will burn forever in the Fire! Imam Ibn ‘Abd al-Barr (d. 463 H) identifies some of these Rafidhi Sahabah:

وروى عن سلمان وأبي نر والمقداد وخباب وأبي سعيد الخدري وزيد بن الأرقم أن علي بن أبي طالب رضي الله عنه أول من أسلم وفضلله ءؤلاء على غيره

Salman, Abu Dharr, al-Miqdad, Khabab, Jabir, Abu Sa’id al-Khudri and Zayd b. Arqam narrated that ‘Ali b. Abi Talib, may Allah be pleased with him, was the first to accept Islam, and they considered him the most superior (among the Sahabah).

These senior Sahabah considered ‘Ali as superior to Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman! By Sunni standards, their bid’ah, therefore, was of the major type! They were complete Rafidhis. Another well-known Sahabi like them was Abu al-Tufayl, radhiyallah ‘anhu. Imam al-Dhahabi states about him:

واسم أبي الطفيل، عامر بن وائلة بن عبد الله بن عمرو الليثي الكتاني الحجازي الشيعي. كان من شيعة الإمام علي

The name of Abu al-Tufayl was ‘Amir b. Wathilah b. ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr al-Laythi al-Kanani al-Hijazi, the Shi’i. He was from the Shi’ah of Imam ‘Ali.

Imam Ibn ‘Abd al-Barr adds:
He was a Shi‘i of ‘Ali and considered him the most superior. He used to extol the two Shaykhs, Abu Bakr and ‘Umar, and would ask for Allah’s mercy upon ‘Uthman.8

Al–Hafiz explains the words of Ibn ‘Abd al–Barr above:

قال أبو عمر كان يعترف بفضل أبي بكر وعمر ولكنه يقدم عليا

Abu ‘Umar said: He accepted the merit of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar but he considered ‘Ali to be the most superior.9

This creates an impossible dilemma for Sunni Islam. If Sunnis stick with their view that Shi‘ism – as defined by them – is a *bid‘ah*, then they must agree that all these fine Sahabah were heretics with no hope of salvation in the Hereafter. By contrast, if they free the Shi‘i Sahabah, then they must equally free all other Shi‘ah and Rawafidh! What is good for the goose is equally good for the gander. Besides, the Sahabah, who met the Prophet, are in an even more accountable position on any Islamic matter than all the generations after them. It gets scary when one considers the possibility that the Messenger of Allah could have been of the same opinion as the Shi‘i Sahabah! If he did, then it would have been Sunnah to place ‘Ali over Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman. In that case, the majority view of the Ahl al–Sunnah on the matter would have been a *bid‘ah* – in fact, a compounded *bid‘ah*.

The other step taken by the Sunni ‘ulama was to confuse their followers on the status and meanings of explicit *ahadith* indicating the overall superiority of Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib over all Sahabah. The most guilty individual in this regard was none other than “Shaykh al–Islam” Ibn Taymiyyah. Others, such as Imam al–Mubarakfuri (d. 1282 H), ‘Allamah al–Albani, Shaykh al–Arnauṭ and others, have also followed his steps, albeit at a much lower level. In this book, we will be examining some of such *ahadith*, proving their authenticity absolutely, and analyzing their texts in the light of the Qur’an and *mutawatir* Sunnah. Our *manhaj* in this regard is open, transparent, mathematical and precise. For instance, we have relied very heavily upon the verdicts concerning the individual narrators by al–Hafiz al–‘Asqalani in his legendary reference work, *al–Taqrib*. The reasons for this approach are two. First, al–Hafiz Ibn Hajar al–‘Asqalani, often fondly referred to simply as al–Hafiz, is one of the greatest Sunni scholars of *rijal* and *hadith*. ‘Allamah al–Albani says about him:

لكن من كان في ريب مما أحكم أنا على بعض الأحاديث فليعد إلى فتح الباري فسجد هناك أشياء كثيرة وكثيرة جداً ينتقدها الحافظ أحمد بن حجر العسقلاني الذي يسمى بحق أمير المؤمنين في الحديث والذي أعتقد أن أظن أن كل من كان مشاركًا في هذا العلم يوافقني على أنه لم تلد النساء بعده مثله.

But, whoever is in doubt concerning the verdicts I have given concerning some *ahadith* (in *Sahih al–Bukhari*), let him refer to *Fath al–Bari*, and he will find there lots and lots of things (in *Sahih al–Bukhari*) which have been criticized by al–Hafiz Ahmad b. Hajar al–‘Asqalani, who is rightly named the Amir al–Muminin in *Hadith*, and whom I believe – and I suppose that anyone who has this knowledge
(i.e. science of hadith) would agree with me – that no woman has ever given birth to anyone like him after him.  

The phrase “amir al-muminin” is of course a reference to the supreme master.

Secondly, al–Hafiz himself states in the Introduction to al–Taqrib:

أنا أحكم على كل شخص منهم بحكم يشمل أصح ما قيل فيه، وأعدل ما وصف به

I have graded every individual among them with a verdict that contains the most correct of what is said about him, and the most just of the descriptions given for him.  

In other words, a lot of things have been said about each of the narrators. But, not everything said about them is authentically transmitted, correct or accurate. So, al–Hafiz, who is a king in the Sunni science of hadith, has compiled only “the most correct” and “the most just” of the statements made about them. No wonder, top Sunni hadith scientists like ‘Allamah al–Albani and others have relied very heavily upon this al–Taqrib in all their works. We will be doing the same throughout this book and others. There are two clear advantages in doing this. One, it would ensure the accuracy of our conclusions on the various narrators. Two, it would keep our book concise and neat. As such, we will firstly quote the criticisms of a Sunni scholar, mostly Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah, against a particular hadith – which establishes ‘Ali’s superiority over all the Sahabah – and then examines the trustworthiness of all its narrators, primarily through al–Taqrib. Where the name of the narrator is not present in al–Taqrib, then we go for the books of Imam al–Dhahabi, who is equally a superweight in Sunni hadith sciences, as well as others like ‘Allamah al–Albani and Shaykh al–Arna’ut.

This humble author has adopted a very strict takhrij style throughout the book. This is why he has excluded ahadith which he believes to be true, but which do not meet the strict standards of authenticity in the Sunni hadith sciences. In particular, we focus on the reliability of the narrators and the full connectivity of the chains. We also seek if there are corroborative supports for either the chains or the texts of the hadith. Most importantly, we also investigate any possible hidden defects in the chains, such as tadlis, poor memory and irsal of the narrators and present detailed researches to make clarifications wherever necessary. Sometimes, in order to save space, we do simply rely upon explicit authentications of chains and ahadith by the topmost Sunni hadith scientists. Through this methodology, we hope to give the full opportunity to whoever is researching the topic in order to determine the real truth.

Meanwhile, we do not neglect Sunni arguments and reports in favour of the superiority of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar either. We query their authenticity too, in line with strict standards of Sunni rijal and further test their compatibility with the Qur’an and undisputed history. The full details of our investigations are provided in our book, so that our esteemed reader can verify, reason and make his independent
Throughout our book, we have relied upon Sunni books only, and specifically those of the highest standing in their respected categories. This way, we aim ensure full accuracy in everything. We implore Allah to forgive us all our mistakes, and to accept this as a worthy act of 'ibadah.

3. Ibid

1. Hadith Al-Qadha, Investigating Its Authenticity

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

و إما قوله قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم لآقتضاكم علي والقضاء يستلزم العلم والدين فهذا الحديث لم بثبت و ليس له إستاذ تقوم به الحجة ... لم يبره أحد في السنن المشهورة ولا المسند المعروفة لإن إستاذ صحيح ولا ضعيف و إنا يروي من طريق من هو معروف بالكنب

As for his statement, “The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: ‘The best judge among you is ‘Ali’”, and justice dispensation requires knowledge and religious devotion. But, this hadith is not authentic, and it has no chain of transmission which makes it a valid proof … It is not recorded by
anyone in the famous Sunan books, and not (by anyone) in the well-known Musnad books – not with a sahih chain, nor with a dha‘if chain. It is only narrated through the route of notorious liars.1

Meanwhile, Imam Ibn Majah (d. 273 H) records in his Sunan:

Haditha Muhammad bin al-Muthanna then ‘Abd al-Wahhab bin ‘Abd al-Majid then Khalid al-Haza – Abi Qilabah – Anas b. Malik:

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “The most merciful of my Ummah to my Ummah is Abu Bakr. The most severe of them in the religion of Allah is ‘Umar. The most shy of them is ‘Uthman. And the best judge among them is ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.”2

This report cancels out the first leg of our Shaykh’s claims: that the hadith is not documented in any of the authoritative Sunan and Musnad books – whether with a sahih chain or even a dha‘if one!

So, the next question is: has the hadith truly been narrated by a liar or liars?

The first narrator, Muhammad b. al-Muthanna is thiqah (trustworthy) without absolutely any doubt. Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) for instance says about him:

Muhammad b. al-Muthanna b. ‘Ubayd al-‘Unaza, Abu Musa al-Basri…. Thiqah (trustworthy), thabt (accurate).3

Elsewhere, he adds about him:

Al-Bukhari narrated 103 hadith from him (in his Sahih), and Muslim also narrated 772 hadith (from him in his Sahih).4

Apparently, he was a super-weight in Sunni hadith.

Al-Hafiz also says about the second narrator:
Abū Muhammad al-Basri: Thiqah (trustworthy). He changed (i.e. his memory weakened) 3 years before his death.\(^5\)

In his Lisan, he gives further, crucial information about him:

*لكنه ما ضر تغيره حديثه فإنه ما حدث بحديث في زمن التغير.*

But, his change (in memory) does not harm his *ahadith*, for he never narrated a single *hadith* during the period of the change.\(^6\)

So, what about the remaining narrators? Shaykh al-Arnaūṭ saves us a lot of time with this *tahqiq*:

*حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا عفان ثنا وهيب ثنا خالد الحذاء عن أبي قلابة عن أنس بن مالك عن النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم: إسناده صحيح على شرط الشخنين.*


We understand from this that both Khalid al–Haza and Abu Qilabah are *thiqah* (trustworthy) narrators of both *Sahih al-Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim*, like Muhammad b. al-Muthanna.

Interestingly, Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H), Imam al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) and ‘Allamah al–Albani (d. 1420 H) also confirm that the second narrator is like the others too in this regard. The ‘Allamah writes:

> أخرجه الترمذي (2 / 309) وابن ماجه (154) وابن حبان (2218) و (2219) والحاكم (3 / 422) من طريق عبيد الوهاب بن عبد المجيد الثقلاني حدثنا خالد الحذاء عن أبي قلابة عن أنس بن مالك: قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم: فذكره، وقال الترمذي: "حديث حسن صحيح". وقال الحاكم: "هذا إسناد صحيح على شرط الشخنين". ووافقه النهgiene وهو كما قال.

Al–Tirmidhi (2/309), Ibn Majah (154), Ibn Hibban (2218) and al–Hakim (3/422) narrated it through the route of ‘**ABD AL–WAHHAB B. ‘ABD AL–MAJID AL–THAQAFI** – Khalid al–Haza – Abu Qilabah – Anas – the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. Al–Tirmidhi said: “The *hadith* is *hasan sahih*”. Al–Hakim (also) said, “*This chain is sahih UPON THE STANDARD OF THE TWO SHAYKHS*”. Al–Dhahabi concurred with him, *and it is (indeed) as they both have stated*.\(^8\)

In a simple summary, *Hadith al–Qadha* – as documented by Imam Ibn Majah – has a chain of
transmission that is *sahih* upon the standard of al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) and Muslim (d. 261 H). All its narrators are relied upon in both *Sahih al-Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim*, and there is no disconnection anywhere in the chain. Apparently, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s weird, unfounded claim that the *hadith* is narrated only by notorious liars is itself a sickening rape of the truth!

There is equally a *mutaba’ah* for Muhammad b. al-Muthanna copied by Imam al-Haythami (d. 807 H):

أخبرنا أحمد بن مكرم بن خالد البرتني، حدثنا علي بن المدني، حدثنا عبد الوهاب الثقفي، حدثنا خالد الحذاء، عن
أبي قلاية عن أنس بن مالك قال: قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم: أرحم أمني بأبى بكر، وأشدهم في أمر
الله عمر، وأصدقهم حياء عثمان، وأقاضهم علي


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: “The most merciful of my Ummah to my Ummah is Abu Bakr. The most severe of them concerning the Command of Allah is ‘Umar. The most shy of them is ‘Uthman. And the best judge among them is ‘Ali.”

We already know that the last four narrators – including Anas – are *thiqah* narrators of both *Sahih al-Bukhari* and *Sahih Muslim*. So, we only have to find out the status of the first two narrators. Once again, Shaykh al-Arnauṭ saves us time. Imam Ibn Hibban (d. 354 H) records this chain in his *Sahih*:

أخبرنا أحمد بن مكرم بن خالد البرتني قال حدثنا علي بن المدني قال حدثنا معن بن عيسى قال حدثنا مالك بن
أنس عن صفوان بن سليم عن عطاء بن يسار عن أبي سعيد الخدري


Al-Arnauṭ says:

إسناده صحيح على شرط البخاري رجاله ثقات رجال الصحيح غير علي بن المدني فمن رجال البخاري

*Its chain is *sahih* upon the standard of al-Bukhari. Its narrators are *thiqah* (trustworthy), narrators of the *Sahih*, except ‘Ali b. al-Madini because he is from the narrators of (*Sahih al-Bukhari* only). So, both al-Birti and ‘Ali b. al-Madini are *thiqah* (trustworthy) narrators of *Sahih al-Bukhari* too. As such, the *mutaba’ah* of ‘Ali b. al-Madini to Muhammad b. al-Muthanna in *Hadith al-Qadha* is *sahih* as well, upon the standard of *Sahih al-Bukhari*!
The hadith has equally been transmitted from other Sahabah, apart from Anas. Imam al-Haythami for instance records:


Narrated Jabir b. 'Abd Allah al-Ansari:

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: “The most merciful of my Ummah to my Ummah is Abu Bakr. The kindest of my Ummah to my Ummah is 'Umar. The most shy of my Ummah is 'Uthman. The best judge of my Ummah is 'Ali b. Abi Talib”.  

He comments:

Al-Tabarani narrated it in al-Awsat, and its chain is hasan.  

In modern prints of Mu’jam al-Awsat of Imam al-Tabarani (d. 360 H), this hadith, unfortunately, is no longer present! The previous existence of this report in al-Awsat is further confirmed by Imam al-Haythami (d. 974 H):

In the report of al-Tabarani in al-Awsat, it is recorded: “The most merciful of my Ummah to my Ummah is Abu Bakr. The kindest of my Ummah to my Ummah is ‘Umar. The most shy of my Ummah is ‘Uthman. The best judge of my Ummah is ‘Ali b. Abi Talib”.  

It has gone missing in the same al-Awsat after the time of al-Haythami.

Finally, ‘Allamah al-Albani has copied Hadith al-Qadha from yet another Sahabi, namely Ibn 'Umar:

The ‘Allamah says:
The companions of the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu 'alaihi wa alihi, used to admit, unanimously, that Amir al-Muminin 'Ali b. Abi Talib, 'alaihi al-salam, was indeed the best judge among them. Imam Ahmad
(d. 241 H), for instance records:


‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, said: “Ali is the best judge among us, and Ubayy is the best reciter among us.”

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ says:

إسناده صحيح على شرط الشيخين

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.

Imam Ahmad further records:


‘Umar said: “Ali is the best judge among us, and Ubayy is the best reciter among us.”

Al-Arnauṭ again comments:

إسناده صحيح على شرط الشيخين

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.

This is the third athar recorded on the same matter by Ahmad b. Hanbal:

‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, delivered a sermon on the pulpit of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, and said: “Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, is the best judge among us, and Ubayy, may Allah be pleased with him, is the best reciter.”⁵

Shaykh Shu’ayb al-Arnauṭ has a simple verdict on it:

صحة

*Sahih*⁶

Notably, ‘Umar mentioned this publicly and none among the Sahabah present – including the most senior ones – objected. This evidences their unanimous concurrence with him on the matter.

Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) records the same *athar* in his *Sahih*:

 حدثنا علي حدثنا يحيى حدثنا سفيان عن حبيب عن سعيد بن جبير عن ابن عباس قال قال عمر رضي الله عنه: أقرؤنا أبي وأقضانا علي


‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, said: “The best reciter among us is Ubayy, and the best judge among us is ‘Ali.”⁷

Apart from ‘Umar, all the other Sahabah also explicitly declared that the best judge among them – including their most senior ones living in Madinah – was none other than Amir al-Muminin. Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H) records:

أخبرني عبد الرحمن بن الحسن الفاضلي بهمدان ثنا إبراهيم بن الحسين ثنا أدم بن أبي إيسا ثنا شعبة عن أبي إسحاق عن عبد الرحمن بن يزيد عن علقة عن عبد الله قال كنتا نتحدث أن أقضي أهل المدينة علي بن أبي طالب رضي الله عنه


“We used to SAY that the best judge among the people of Madinah was ‘Ali b. Abi Talib, may Allah be pleased with him.”⁸
Al-Hakim says:

هذا حديث صحيح على شرط الشيخين

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.9

Imam al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H), on his part, keeps silent about it. The reason is unclear since the athar has a perfectly sahih chain. Meanwhile, he has personally authenticated the sanad and all its narrators in the same book in other ahadith! For example, al-Hakim records this chain:

أخبرنا عبد الرحمن بن الحسن الفاضلي ثنا إبراهيم بن الحسين ثنا آدم بن أبي إyas ثنا شعبة عن منصور عن إبراهيم عن علقة عن عبد الله رضي الله عنه


The only differences in this sanad from that of the athar are Mansur and Ibrahim. Al-Hakim declares:

هذا حديث صحيح على شرط الشيخين

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.11

Interestingly, al-Dhahabi confirms the verdict:

على شرط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahih) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim.12

This proves that ‘Abd al-Rahman b. al-Hasan al-Qadi, Ibrahim b. al-Husayn, Adam b. Abi Iyas, Shu’bah and ‘Alqamah are thiqah (trustworthy) narrators!

But, what is the status Abu Ishaq and ‘Abd al-Rahman b. Yazid – the only remaining narrators of Ibn Mas’ud’s athar? Note this chain documented by Imam al-Hakim:

أخبرنا أبو زكرياء العنيقي ثنا محمد بن عبد السلام ثنا إسحاق أبيا يحيى بن آدم ثنا إسرائيل عن أبي إسحاق عن عبد الرحمن بن زيد عن عبد الله رضي الله عنه

– ‘Abd al-Rahman b. Yazid – ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas’ud), may Allah be pleased with him.\textsuperscript{13}

Al-Hakim comments:

هذا حدث صحيح على شروط الشيخين

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.\textsuperscript{14}

Al-Dhahabi also reiterates:

على شروط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahih) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim.\textsuperscript{15}

As such, all the narrators of the athar are thiqah (trustworthy).

But then, is there any break between Shu’bah and Abu Ishaq? We have seen the unbroken connection between all the other narrators except these two. This chain, recorded by al-Hakim, puts the seal on things:

حدثني محمد بن صالح بن هانئ نانا المسيب بن زهير نانا عاصم بن علي نانا شعبة عن أبي إسحاق قال: سمعت وهب بن جابر يحدث عن عبد الله بن عمرو رضي الله عنهما


Al-Hakim states:

هذا حدث صحيح على شروط الشيخين

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.\textsuperscript{17}

Al-Dhahabi agrees:

على شروط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahih) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim.\textsuperscript{18}

Simply put, the chain of the athar of Ibn Mas’ud is sahih. All the narrators are thiqah (trustworthy), and
there is no disconnection whatsoever in the sanad.

1. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 5, p. 113, # 21122
2. Ibid
3. Ibid, vol. 5, p. 113, # 21123
4. Ibid
5. Ibid, vol. 5, p. 113, # 21124
6. Ibid
10. Ibid, vol. 4, p. 372, # 7963
11. Ibid
12. Ibid
13. Ibid, vol. 2, p. 244, # 2888
15. Ibid
16. Ibid, vol. 4, p. 536, # 8505
17. Ibid
18. Ibid

3. Hadith Al-Qadha, ‘Ali’s Superior Knowledge Of The Qur’an And Sunnah

There is no dispute about the fact that Amir al-Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam, was the most competent in justice dispensation among all the Sahabah. In fact, he is the best judge in our whole Ummah till the Day of al-Qiyamah after its Prophet, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi. On a specific level, he was better – in terms of justice dispensation – than Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman. So, what is the direct implication of this?

In Islam, justice dispensation is based squarely upon the Qur’an and Sunnah:

فاحكم بينهم بما أنزل الله

So, judge between them **by what Allah has revealed**.

The Qur’an itself, in its entirety, is described as “a judgment” by its Master:
And thus We have sent it down as a judgment in Arabic.

As such, complete knowledge of everything in it is required for effective justice dispensation.

Moreover, the Sunnah is the divinely inspired explanations of this “judgment” called al-Qur’an:

And We have sent down unto you (Muhammad) al-Dhikr (i.e. the Qur’an) that you may explain clearly to mankind what is sent down to them.

Apparently, a person does not know the Book of Allah until he has known its explanations by the Messenger of Allah. These explanations, according to the same Book, only originated from the Lord as well:

He (Muhammad) never speaks of (his own) desire or caprice. It is nothing but a wahy that is revealed (to him).

It is obvious. If anyone were more knowledgeable of the Qur’an and Sunnah than ‘Ali in this Ummah, he (‘Ali) would not have been its best judge. It is simply unfathomable that Allah and His Messenger would have conferred upon him such a rank while there was/is another – in the Ummah as a whole – who was/is more competent with the tools of justice dispensation than he was!

It is noteworthy that knowledge of the revelations of Allah surpasses mere knowledge of al-halal (the permissible) and al-haram (the prohibited). It covers everything from the Lord to humanity. Most importantly, merely knowing the legal status of a thing is not enough for justice dispensation. The judge must equally be fully aware of the penalties (if any) prescribed for it, and the best ways and circumstances to exercise personal discretion in different cases in line with the Wish of Allah. None, apparently, is as competent in these fields as ‘Ali.

At this point, it is apposite to quote this groundbreaking riwayah referenced by al–Hafiz Ibn Kathir (d. 774 H):

قال شبَّة بن الحاجج، عن سَمَّاك، عن خالد بن عُرْعَة: أنه سمع علياً وشبهة أيضاً، عن الناسِم بن أبي بزة: أنه صعد منبر الكوفة
Shu‘bah b. al-Hajjaj, from Simak, from Khalid b. ‘Ar’arah that he heard ‘Ali; and Shu‘bah again narrated from al-Qasim b. Abi Barrah from Abu al-Tufayl that he heard ‘Ali; and IT IS ALSO AUTHENTICALLY TRANSMITTED through many chains that Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib climbed the pulpit of Kufah and said, “You will not ask me about ANY verse in the Book of Allah, or about ANY Sunnah from the Messenger of Allah, except that I will inform you about that.”

None of the Sahabah was ever able to make a similar claim!

Secondly, justice must be administered with utmost fairness and equity:

If you judge, judge between them with fairness and equity.

This verse allows the use of personal discretion in the administration of justice, especially in all cases where no divinely fixed penalties or judgments are available. But even then, it also reiterates the notion that the judge must know everything in the Qur’an and the Sunnah! Full knowledge of both is required to determine whether or not there is a fixed penalty or judgment concerning a particular case. If there is none, then the judge uses his discretion. Where the judge does not know whether Allah has already fixed the judgment for the issue before him – due to an insufficient knowledge of the Book and the Tradition – he is most likely to effect a miscarriage of justice, without even realizing it!

Moreover, the judge must give his judgments with the best interests of fairness and equity at heart. This is the second message of the above verse. Where there is a divinely fixed penalty or judgment, he must apply it in the fairest and most equitable manners. Where there is no such fixed penalty or judgment, then he equally must adopt his personal discretion in ways that best ensure a completely fair and equitable dispensation of justice.

Amir al-Muminin has been declared the best judge by Allah and His Messenger. Apparently, he is the one, within Islam, with the best knowledge and practice in justice dispensation. Most importantly, he is the fairest and the most equitable among us all – including the Sahabah – in the application of Allah’s Fixed Verdicts and in the just administration of personal discretion.

The most crucial part of this discourse, probably, is stated in this verse:

O Dawud! We have appointed you a khalifah over the earth. Therefore, judge between mankind with the
First and foremost, it is clear from this verse that justice dispensation is the job of the khilafah, to the exclusion of all others. He is the judge of “mankind”. Every single other human beings comes under his juridical authority. Of course, he might appoint subordinate judges to assist him, under his close supervision. However, the job belongs to him alone. Therefore, whoever is the most qualified to be judge is also the most qualified for the khilafah!

Besides, the competent judge is he who is able to discern the truth, and who judges with the truth. Judgment with the truth involves the objective application of Allah’s Fixed Verdicts over relevant issues, as well as the selfless administration of personal discretion in deserving cases. The judge therefore must be very intelligent and completely truthful. Application of personal discretion to reach true justice requires an extremely high level of intelligence, selflessness, sincerity and honesty. An unintelligent person cannot be expected to skillfully detect the truth from a clog of complex arguments and proofs before him. Moreover, a corrupt or self-serving fellow cannot be expected to judge others with the truth, or to apply his personal discretion fairly. With these facts in mind, one can then safely conclude and proclaim that Amir al-Muminin – being the best judge in this Ummah – was the most qualified for the khilafah immediately after the Prophet. In addition, he is the most truthful, the most intelligent, the most selfless, the most sincere, the most honest, and the best in recognizing and applying the truth in this Ummah after the Messenger.

1. Qur’an 5:48
2. Qur’an 13:37
3. Qur’an 16:44
4. Qur’an 53:3–4
6. Qur’an 5:42
7. Qur’an 38:26

4. Hadith Al-Qadha, An Age Of Jungle Justice I

The khilafah of Muslims is also their sovereign judge:

يا داوود إنا جعلناك خليفة في الأرض فاحكم بين الناس بالحق

O Dawud! We have appointed you a khilafah over the earth. Therefore, judge between mankind with the truth.¹
Since ‘Umar was recognized by most Muslims of his time as their khalifah, it follows naturally that he was also their sovereign judge. The question is: was ‘Umar a competent judge? To find the answer, we must look at some iconic cases decided by ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab.

Imam Ibn Khuzaymah (d. 311 H) records about an interesting case:


‘Ali b. Abi Talib passed by a lunatic woman from so-and-so tribe, and she had committed adultery. ‘Umar ordered that she be stoned to death. So, ‘Ali returned her and said to ‘Umar, “O Amir al-Muminin! Do you want to stone this (woman)?” He (‘Umar) replied, “Yes”. He (‘Ali) said, “Do you remember that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: ‘The pen has been lifted about three people: the mentally ill, the person sleeping until he wakes up, and the child until he becomes an adolescent.” He (‘Umar) responded, “You have said the truth”. So, ‘Umar freed her (i.e. the lunatic woman).2

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) comments:

It is a sahih hadith. Its narrators are thiqah (trustworthy).3

Elsewhere, Imam Ibn Khuzaymah also records:

'Ali b. Abi Talib passed by a lunatic woman from so-and-so tribe, and she had committed adultery. ‘Umar ordered that she be stoned to death. So, ‘Ali returned her and said to ‘Umar, “O Amir al-Muminin! Do you want to stone this (woman)?” He (‘Umar) replied, “Yes”. He (‘Ali) said, “Do you remember that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: ‘The pen has been lifted about three people: the mentally ill, the person sleeping until he wakes up, and the child until he becomes an adolescent.’” He (‘Umar) responded, “You have said the truth”. So, he freed her (i.e. the lunatic woman).  

‘Allamah al-Albani rules:

إسناده صحيح

Its chain is sahih  

The exact narration above is documented by Imam Ibn Hibban (d. 354 H) in his Sahih through the route of his teacher, Imam Ibn Khuzaymah, with the same chain.  

‘Allamah al-Albani again says:

صحيح

Sahih  

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ also comments:

رجاله نفاث رجال مسلم

Its narrators are thiqah (trustworthy), narrators of (Sahih) Muslim.  

Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H), a student of Ibn Hibban, records the hadith as well:

صدقة تختص بالرقية على الله ثم على مهاد أبو حمزة، ثم على الأثريين، ثم على من بعثه الله به مبسوط، ثم على أن الله رفع الأقلام عنهم ودمع عليه وصلى عليه وسلم. القول: يا أمير المؤمنين أترجم هذه؟ قال: فلا تذكر أن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم قال: رفع القلم عن ثلاث: عن المجون، وعن المنزل، وعن الصبي حتى يحتفظ عن الصبي حتى يحتفظ. قال صدقت فقل عنها.

‘Ali b. Abi Talib passed by a lunatic woman from so-and-so tribe, and she had committed adultery. ‘Umar b. al-Khattab ordered that she be stoned to death. So, ‘Ali returned her and said to ‘Umar, “O Amir al-Muminin! Do you want to stone this (woman)?” He (‘Umar) replied, “Yes”. He (‘Ali) said, “Do you remember that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: ‘The pen has been lifted about three people: the mentally ill, the person sleeping until he wakes up, and the child until he becomes an adolescent.’” He (‘Umar) responded, “You have said the truth”. So, he freed her (i.e. the lunatic woman).9

Al–Hakim says:

هذا حديث صحيح على شرط الشيخين

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs10

Imam al–Dahabi (d. 748 H) concurs:

على شرطهما

(Sahih) upon the standard of both of them11

Imam Abu Dawud (d. 275 H) documents a fuller version of the hadith that gives some disturbing details:


A lunatic woman, who had committed adultery, was brought to ‘Umar. So, he consulted with some people about her, and therefore ordered that she be stoned to death. But, ‘Ali b. Abi Talib, ridwanullah ‘alaihi, passed by her and said, “What is the issue with this (woman)”? They replied, “She is a lunatic woman from so-and-so tribe. She committed adultery and ‘Umar ordered that she be stoned to death.” So, he (‘Ali) said, “Return with her (to ‘Umar).” Then he (‘Ali) came to him (‘Umar), and said, “O Amir al-Muminin! Do you know that the pen has been lifted in the case of a lunatic until he is cured, and of someone sleeping until he wakes up, and in the case of a child until he becomes mentally mature?” He (‘Umar) replied, “Yes, I do”. He (‘Ali) asked, “So, why do you want to stone this (woman)”? He (‘Umar) replied, “There is NOTHING!” He (‘Ali) said, “Free her”. So, he (‘Umar) freed her, saying Allahu
‘Allamah al-Albani says:

صحيح

Sahih

Reading all the narrations together, one gets the full picture of what happened:

1. A lunatic woman was charged with adultery, which she apparently committed in her still extant state of insanity.

2. The Shari‘ah provides that crimes committed in a state of insanity are not justiciable.

3. ‘Umar was well aware of this rule, and was fully convinced that the lunatic woman truly committed the adultery in a state of insanity. He nonetheless consulted with his team of judicial advisers (which excluded ‘Ali) on the matter, and eventually made up his mind to execute her.

4. While convicting the lunatic woman and passing the death sentence against her, ‘Umar fully remembered the above-mentioned rule of the Shari‘ah.

5. Nonetheless, ‘Umar ordered the execution of the lunatic woman for “nothing”, in his own words.


7. ‘Ali asked ‘Umar if the latter knew the Shari‘ah ruling concerning lunatic people. ‘Umar replied: “Yes, I do”. Surprised, he further asked the latter why he wanted to execute the lunatic woman in that case. ‘Umar made no secret of his intention. There was simply “nothing”! There was no reason. He only wished to kill the woman, and that was it!


Without ‘Ali’s timely intervention, ‘Umar would have deliberately executed the innocent woman for “nothing”!

1. Qur’an 38:26
5. Hadith Al-Qadha, An Age Of Jungle Justice II

Imam Ibn Abi Hatim (d. 327 H) records about another iconic judgment delivered by ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab in his capacity as the khalifah over the Ummah:

أخبرنا أبي، نَتا أبو بكر محمد بن بشار، نَتا إبن أبي عدي، عن سعيد، عن فتادة عن أبي حرب، يعني: ابن أبي الأسود البدلي، عن أبيه، عن عمر بن الخطاب، رفعت إليه امرأة ولدت ستة أشهر، فهم برمجة، فبلغ ذلك علينا، فقال: ليس عليها رجم، قال الله تعالى: والوالدت يرضعن أولادهن حولين كامليين وستة أشهر، ذلك ثلاثون شهرًا.

A woman was brought to ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab. She had delivered after (only) six months of pregnancy. So, he (‘Umar) resolved to stone her to death. This (decision) reached ‘Ali. Therefore, he (‘Ali) said, “She does not deserve any penalty of stoning to death. Allah says: ‘The mothers shall give suck to their children for two whole years (2:233)’. This (period) plus six months equals thirty months (mentioned in 46:15 as the total for both pregnancy and suckling)”.

Imam al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) submits about the first narrator:
Abu Hatim al-Razi, Muhammad b. Idris b. al-Mundhir b. Dawud b. Mihran: \textit{al-imam (the leader in Hadith), al-hafiz (the hadith scientist), al-naqid (the hadith critic), shaykh al-muhadithin (teacher of the hadith scientists and narrators)}.\footnote{2}

About the second narrator, al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) says:

\[
\text{Muhammad b. Bashar b. ‘Uthman al–‘Abdi al–Basri, Abu Bakr Bandar: \textit{Thiqah (trustworthy)}.}\footnote{3}
\]

What of the third narrator? Al–Dhahabi submits:

\[
\text{Muhammad b. Ibrahim b. ‘Adi, Abu ‘Amr, from Basra: \textit{Thiqah (trustworthy)}.}\footnote{4}
\]

Al–Hafiz agrees:

\[
\text{Muhammad b. Ibrahim b. ‘Adi.... Abu ‘Amr al–Basri: \textit{Thiqah (trustworthy)}.}\footnote{5}
\]

The fourth narrator is Sa‘id, and al–Hafiz comments on him in this manner:

\[
\text{Sa‘id b. Abi ‘Arubah Mihran al–Yashkiri, their freed slave, Abu al–Nadhar al–Basri: \textit{Thiqah (trustworthy), hafiz (a hadith scientist), he wrote books. However, he did a lot of \textit{tadlis}, and became confused. He was one of the most authoritative narrators from Qatadah}.}\footnote{6}
\]

Concerning the fifth narrator, al–Hafiz further submits:

\[
\text{Qatadah b. Da’amah b. Qatadah al–Sudusi, Aboo al–Kharaa ib al–Basri: \textit{Thiqah (trustworthy), thabt (accurate)}.}\footnote{7}
\]
Like the fourth narrator, he too is accused of *tadlis*, as proclaimed by al-Hafiz:

Qatadah b. Da’amah al-Sudusi al-Basri, the companion of Anas b. Malik, may Allah the Most High be pleased with him. He was the *hafiz* (*hadith* scientist) of his time, and he is famous for *tadlis*. Al-Nasai and others described him with it.8

The sixth narrator is trustworthy as well, as affirmed by al-Hafiz:

Abu Harb b. Abi al-Aswad al-Dili al-Basri: *Thiqah* (trustworthy)9

With regards to the last narrator, al-Hafiz states:

Abu al-Aswad al-Dili....: *Thiqah* (trustworthy)10

In a word, all the narrators are trustworthy. But, there are three issues with the chain. The fourth narrator (Sa’id) did *tadlis* a lot and also became confused. The question is: does his *tadlis* affect his narrations from Qatadah, especially as he has narrated in an ‘an–‘an manner? Moreover, did the third narrator (Ibn Abi ‘Adi) hear from him before or during his confusion? Lastly, Qatadah himself was famous for *tadlis*. So, does his *tadlis* affect his ‘an–‘an reports from Abu Harb?

Some of these questions are answered in the following isnad documented by Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) in his *Sahih*:


Interestingly, this chain is almost identical to the one we are investigating! We see that Sa’id has narrated ‘an–‘an from Qatadah, and al-Bukhari considers the sanad to be *sahih*. This proves that Sa’id’s *tadlis* does not affect his ‘an–‘an reports from Qatadah. It is noteworthy that Qatadah’s ‘an–‘an reports from Anas are also accepted as *sahih*, as in the above chain.
In this sanad of al-Bukhari, Ibn Abi ‘Adi is conjoined with Yahya. However, in another chain in the same Sahih, he stands alone:

 حدئننا محمد بن بشار حدئنا ابن أبي عدي عن سعيد عن قتادة عن أنس رضي الله


As such, Ibn Abi ‘Adi authentically transmitted from Sa’id. He apparently narrated from the Sa’id before the latter’s confusion. Moreover, this isnad reiterates the fact that Sa’id’s ‘an–‘an reports from Qatadah are sahih. In other words, his taqdis does not affect them.

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) confirms all our words:

 حدئنا ابن المنфи: ثنا ابن أبي عدي عن سعيد عن قتادة.... قلت: وهذا إسناد صحيح على شرط الشيخين.

Ibn al-Muthanna – Ibn Abi ‘Adi – Sa’id – Qatadah.... I (al-Albani) say: This chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.

Imam Ibn Khuzaymah (d. 311 H) also records:

 حدئنا محمد بن بشار و أبو موسى قالا: حدئنا ابن أبي عدي عن سعيد عن قتادة عن أبي تميمة عن الأشعري. يعني أبا موسى


Dr. Al-A’zami declares:

 إسناده صحيح

Its chain is sahih

Needless to say, Ibn Khuzaymah also considers the sanad to be sahih, and has therefore included it in his Sahih.

The bottom-line is as follows:
1. Ibn Abi ‘Adi authentically narrated from Sa’id, before the latter’s confusion.

3. The ‘an–an reports of Sa’id from Qatadah are sahih. The former’s tadlis does not affect them.

5. Some ‘an–an reports of Qatadah – like those from Anas and Abu Tamimah – are also sahih. Qatadah’s tadlis has no effect on them.

The big question, at this point, is: what is the status of Qatadah’s ‘an–an narrations from Abu Harb? According to high-ranking Sunni muhadithun, such narrations are sahih. For instance, ‘Allamah al-Albani states:

 حدثننا مسدد: نا يحثي عن ابن أبي عروبة عن قنادة عن أبي حرب

ابن أبي الأسود عن أبيه عن علي

قلت: وهذا إسناد صحيح


I say: This chain is sahih. 16

This chain, like some others, is almost identical with that of the report from Ibn Abi Hatim. Here, the ‘Allamah confirms that the ‘an–an reports of Sa’id from Qatadah are sahih, as well as Qatadah’s ‘an–an narrations from Abu Harb. Shaykh al-Arnaūṭ too backs him:

 حدثننا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا عبد الصمد بن عبد الوارث ثنا هشام عن قنادة عن أبي حرب بن أبي الأسود عن أبيه
عن علي رضي الله عنه ... إسناده صحيح على شرط مسلم


Imam Abu Ya’la further records:

 حدثننا عبد الله حدثنا معاذ بن هشام حدثني أبي عن قنادة عن أبي حرب بن الأسود الدبلي عن أبي الأسود عن علي
بن أبي طالب

Shaykh Dr. Asad comments:

إسناده صحيح\textsuperscript{19}

Its chain is \textit{sahih}\textsuperscript{19}

In a simple summary, the \textit{athar} from Ibn Abi Hatim about how ‘Umar sentenced a woman to death for delivering the baby only after six months of pregnancy has an impeccably \textit{sahih} chain. All the narrators are \textit{thiqah} (trustworthy), and the \textit{sanad} is fully connected.

There are some serious substantive and procedural problems with the judgment of ‘Umar, which reveal a lot about him. He sentenced the woman to death by stoning. This suggests that he had convicted her of adultery. His only proof against her was that she delivered her baby only after six months of her known pregnancy. In the obviously invalid view of ‘Umar, a six–month pregnancy was absolutely impossible. As such, the woman must have been secretly pregnant before her husband started counting the days of her pregnancy – apparently, from the date of their last successful encounter (by his calculations). In other words, while her husband was having sexual intercourse with her (and most probably, it was their first time), she was already secretly pregnant for another man.

The Book of Allah has laid down the procedural law in all cases of \textit{zina}:

والذين يرمون المحصنات ثم لم يأتوا بأربعة شهادات فاجلدوهم ثمانين جلدة ولا تقبلوا لهم شهادة أبدا وأولئك هم الفاسقون

Those who accuse chaste women, \textbf{and do not produce four witnesses}, flog them with eighty stripes, and reject their testimony forever, \textbf{they indeed are the liars}.\textsuperscript{20}

So, in order to establish the charge of \textit{zina} against anyone, four witnesses who saw the crime \textit{with their own eyes} must be called upon to testify. Without the production of those four witnesses, the accuser himself must be penalized, and declared an eternal liar whose future testimonies must always be rejected.

Was ‘Umar aware of the above verse? The answer is not clear. What is undeniable however is that he paid absolutely no attention to it. He never demanded the testimony of four eye–witnesses to support his charge of \textit{zina} against the woman. He simply convicted her based upon his mere \textit{suspicion}. This singular incident casts a huge dark cloak over ‘Umar till the Hour.
Firstly, ‘Umar had wrongly convicted the woman of adultery without evidence. He never demanded or presented four witnesses to support his conviction (which in essence is also an accusation). Therefore, he himself deserved to be flogged with eighty stripes and declared a persona non grata within the Islamic Ummah. The other persons who dragged the woman to him also needed to be investigated. If they too had accused her of zina without calling four eye-witnesses to testify, then each of them must also be punished in the same manner as ‘Umar.

Secondly, let us assume that ‘Umar did not merely rely upon unfounded suspicion in convicting the woman. Rather, four eye-witnesses who saw her in the middle of the adultery were summoned, and they testified. Therefore, she was indeed guilty and truly deserved the stoning penalty. Where then was her partner in the crime? What sentence did ‘Umar hand down upon him? If two people committed zina, is it only the woman that can be punished? Are men supposed to go scotfree for their crimes of adultery? It is extremely strange that ‘Umar was itching to send the woman to her grave, without asking a single question about her accomplice!
The khalifah of Muslims is their supreme judge on every aspect of their religion, like the Messenger of Allah. As such, Muslims are required to refer all their religious problems and disputes to him for judgment, and his verdicts are binding over them. This function necessitates that the khalifah be the most knowledgeable of the Ummah throughout his administration. Otherwise, he would be unfit for the grand office. Issuing correct religious verdicts on all types of religious questions and disputes, from all persons of all calibres, certainly requires unparalleled knowledge.

During his rule, a man came to ‘Umar b. al-Khattab with his personal religious problem. Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records about how the khalifah handled it:

A man came to ‘Umar and said: “I have seminal discharges and I cannot find water (to do the ghusl)”. He (‘Umar) said, “Do not perform Salat.” So, ‘Ammar said, “Do you remember, O Amir al-Muminin, when I and you were in a military detachment and we had seminal discharges and could not find water and you (‘Umar) did not perform the Salat. As for me, I rolled myself in dust and performed the Salat. So, the Prophet, peace be upon him, said, “It was enough for you to strike the soil with your hands and then blow and then wipe your face and palms”’. Umar said: “Fear Allah, O Ammar!” Therefore, he (‘Ammar) replied, “If you so like, I would not narrate it”. ¹

There are some really interesting facts in this narration:

‘Umar and Ammar, radhiyallahu ‘anhu, were both together in a military detachment, and they had seminal discharges.

Ammar rolled himself in the soil in order to cleanse himself for Salat, due to a lack of water. He had no

¹ There are some really interesting facts in this narration:
divine guidance for the act. It was only his intuition.

‘Umar, on his part, completely refrained from offering any Salat as long as he could not find water.

Both recounted their experiences to the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi, who taught them tayammum as the correct step should they encounter a similar situation.

During ‘Umar’s rule, a man came to him with the same problem that he personally had gone through. But, rather than offer to him the solution of tayammum as taught by the Prophet, ‘Umar instructed the man with his own initial wrong step!

‘Ammar attempted to remind ‘Umar of the Sunnah in such situations. But, the latter simply did not want to hear about it!

There are a number of questions here. First and foremost, did ‘Umar deliberately reject the Sunnah or not? This depends upon whether he actually remembered the incident involving him and ‘Ammar. If he did, and still gave the ruling that he gave, then he would have been contemptuous of the Sunnah. Moreover, even if he had completely forgotten it, why did he not act on ‘Ammar’s reminder? From the look of it, he was not convinced by ‘Ammar’s narration. He most probably had very serious doubts about the accuracy of ‘Ammar’s hadith. Therefore, he saw no real reason to alter his decision on the matter.

So, the best-case scenario is that ‘Umar had absolutely forgotten the incident of tayammum, which involved him personally and directly. In addition, when ‘Ammar attempted to revive his memory of the event, he had grave trust issues with the latter’s report. Therefore, he did not remember, and there was no other reliable source to bring back his memories of the incident. The worst-case scenario is that ‘Umar actually remembered the hadith, or was at least successfully reminded of it by ‘Ammar. Yet, he thought that his personal solution to the issue before him outweighed the Sunnah of the Messenger of Allah. As such, he was in contempt of Muhammad and his teachings.

We will go with the best-case scenario. ‘Umar had completely forgotten, and was not successfully reminded. This fact casts a mammoth shadow of doubt over ‘Umar’s memory power. Since he forgot the incident of tayammum so completely and absolutely, it is extremely uncertain that he was able to remember many – if not most – other teachings of the Prophet that were necessary in his discharge of his day-to-day judicial functions. The end result is that he lacked the requisite scholarly prowess for the office. The natural product of absolutely forgetting anything is complete ignorance of it.

Something that baffles the mind is how ‘Umar came to the conclusion that he could issue rulings in the Shari’ah with his personal opinions simply because he had forgotten, or did not know, the correct positions. Is ignorance an excuse for the adoption of personal opinions in the Law of Allah? The Qur’an answers:

وَمَنْ لَمْ يُحْكِمْ بِمَا أَنزَلَ اللَّهُ فَأُولَئِكَ هُمُ الكَافِرُونَ
Whosoever does NOT give rulings, verdicts, judgments, or commands based upon what Allah has revealed, such people are the infidels.  

Therefore, giving a ruling by personal opinion amounts to disbelief (\textit{kufr}), according to Allah. Why did ‘Umar take such an extreme risk? He should have simply remained silent, or sought the advice of superior jurists like Amir al-Muminin, ‘\textit{alahei al-salam}, Ibn ‘Abbas, \textit{radhiyallahu ‘anhu}, and others. His reliance upon personal opinion in issuing a ruling in the Shari‘ah of Allah was a very wrong step. It saved neither him, nor the man who came to him for judgment.

Perhaps, the most disturbing part is that the ruling of \textit{tayammum} is explicitly stated at two different places in the Book of Allah:

\begin{quote}
 وإن كنتم مرضى أو على سفر أو جاء أحد منكم من الغائط أو لامست النساء فلم تجدوا ماء فتيمموا صعيدا طيبا فامسحوا بوجوهكم وأيديكم
\end{quote}

And if you are ill, or on a journey, or one of you comes after answering the call of nature, or you have had sexual intercourse with women and you cannot find water, perform \textit{tayammum} with clean soil and rub therewith your faces and hands.  

It is apparent. Despite the double presence of the ruling of \textit{tayammum} in the Qur’an, ‘Umar did NOT know it. This raises a blood–red flag on ‘Umar’s knowledge of the Book of Allah. Obviously, he was not a \textit{hafiz} (memorizer) of the Qur’an. Secondly, his knowledge of its verses, and of \textit{al-Fiqh}, must have been extremely deficient, as \textit{tayammum} is only one of the beginner’s courses in Islamic jurisprudence!

‘Umar’s controversial judgment expectedly split the \textit{Ummah}. There were his loyalists who thought that his clearly invalid ruling was more correct than the Qur’an and Sunnah! There were also his opponents who sided with Allah and His Messenger. One of the staunchest loyalists of ‘Umar was ‘Abd Allah b. Mas’ud, a very senior Sahabi. Imam Muslim records:

\begin{quote}
 حدثنا يحيى بن يحيى وأبو بكر بن أبي شيبة وابن نمير جميعا عن أبي معاوية قال أبو بكر حدثنا أبو معاوية عن الأعمش عن شقيق قال كنت جالسا مع عبد الله وأبي موسى فقال أبو موسى ثم يا أبا عبد الرحمن أرأيت لو أن رجلا أجنباً فلم يجد الماء فهذا كيف يصنع بالماء فقلاه عبد الله لا تثيمم وإن لم يجد الماء فقلاه فكيف يصنع بهذه الآية في سورة المائدة قال أبو أيوب أننا نفعل بالماء فقلاه عبد الله لم تثيمم وإن لم تتمكن عابد الله أن يفعل بالماء عندها فكيف يصنع بهذه الآية في سورة المائدة قال أبو أيوب إننا نفعل بالماء فقلاه عبد الله أن يفعل بالماء عندها فكيف يصنع بهذه الآية في سورة المائدة قال أبو أيوب إننا نفعل بالماء فقلاه عبد الله أن يفعل بالماء عندها فكيف يصنع بهذه الآية في سورة المائدة.
\end{quote}

Yahya b. Yahya, Abu Bakr b. Abi Shaybah and Ibn Numayr – Abu Mu‘awiyah – al–A’mash – Shaqiq:
I was sitting with ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas‘ud) and Abu Musa (al-Ash‘ari). So, Abu Musa asked: “O Abu ‘Abd al-Rahman, what is your opinion: if a man had a seminal discharge and could not find water for one month, how should he do about the Salat? ‘Abd Allah replied, “He should NOT perform tayammum even if he cannot find water for a month”.

Abu Musa then said, “What about this verse in Surat al-Maidah said, ‘And you cannot find water, then perform tayammum with clean soil’?” ‘Abd Allah replied, “If they were allowed on the basis of this verse, there is a possibility that they would perform tayammum with soil even if water were available but cold.” So, Abu Musa said to ‘Abd Allah, “Have you not heard the statement of ‘Ammar: ‘The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, sent me on an errand and I had a seminal discharge, but could not find water. So I rolled myself in the soil just as a beast rolls itself. Then, I came to the Prophet, peace be upon him then and mentioned that to him and he (the Messenger) said: “It would have been enough for you to do thus”. Then he struck the earth with his hands once and wiped his right hand with the help of his left hand and the exterior of his palms and his face’.” ‘Abd Allah replied: “Didn’t you see that ‘Umar was NOT satisfied with the statement of ‘Ammar?”

Abu Musa was on the side of the Qur’an and Sunnah, and sought to correct Ibn Mas‘ud on his diehard ‘Umarist stance on tayammum. The former quoted the Book of Allah and the explicit teaching of His Messenger. Ibn Mas‘ud however rejected both, citing excuses. He could not allow the people to follow the Qur’an, because there was a “possibility” that they would abuse its ruling. Well, this same logic could be employed to turn down everything that Islam teaches! Moreover, Ibn Mas‘ud equally refused the Sunnah of the Prophet only because ‘Umar was not satisfied with ‘Ammar’s hadith!

1. Abu al-Husayn Muslim b. al-Hajjaj al-Qushayri al-Naysaburi, Ṣahih Muslim (Beirut: Dar Ihya al-Turath al-‘Arabi) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad ‘Abd al-Baqi], vol. 1, p. 280, #112
2. Qur’an 5:44
3. Qur’an 4:43 and 5:6

7. Hadith Al-Qadha, An Age Of Jungle Justice IV

Tayammum was not the only topic in Islamic jurisprudence that ‘Umar had great difficulty grasping. There were many others, even according to his own confessions. We will be briefly examining a few examples and their implications.

Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) opens the discussion:
Ahmad b. Abi Rajah – Yahya – Abu Hayyan al–Tamimi – Shu’bi – Ibn ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with them both:

‘Umar delivered a sermon on the pulpit of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, saying, “Verily, there was revealed an order making alcohol haram, and it is made from five things: grape, date, wheat, barley and honey. Alcohol is whatsoever clouds the mind. I wish the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, had not left us before he could explain three matters to us: the inheritance of the grandfather, kalalah and various types of riba (usury).”

Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records too:

‘Umar delivered a sermon on the pulpit of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. He thanked Allah and praised him. Then he said, “Now, coming to the point: verily, there was revealed an order making alcohol haram on the day it was revealed. It is made from five things: wheat, barley, date, raisin and honey. Alcohol is anything which clouds the intellect. There are three matters, O people, that I wish the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, had explained to us: inheritance of the grandfather, kalalah and various types of riba (usury).”

Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) documents too:

‘Umar delivered a sermon on the pulpit of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. He thanked Allah and praised him. Then he said, “Now, coming to the point: verily, there was revealed an order making alcohol haram on the day it was revealed. It is made from five things: wheat, barley, date, raisin and honey. Alcohol is anything which clouds the intellect. There are three matters, O people, that I wish the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, had explained to us: inheritance of the grandfather, kalalah and various types of riba (usury).”


“There are three matters. Had the Prophet, peace be upon him, clearly explained them to us, that
would have been more beloved to me than this world and whatsoever is in it: the khilafah (caliphate), kalalah and riba (usury)”.

Al-Hakim says:

هذا حدث صحيح على شرط الشيوخ

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs

Al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) agrees:

على شرط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahih) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim

Imam Ahmad b. Hanbal (d. 241 H) has an even clearer report:

حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا يحيى بن أبي عروبة ثنا قتادة عن سعيد بن المسرب قال علما عمر رضي الله عنه

ان آخر ما نزل من القرآن آية الربا وان رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم قبض ولم يفسروا فدعوا الربا والرقب


‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, said: “Verily, the last of what was revealed in the Qur’an was the Verse of Riba. And verily, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, died and never explained it. Therefore, avoid riba and doubt.

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ comments:

حسن رجاله ثقات رجال الشيوخ

It is hasan. Its narrators are thiqah (trustworthy), narrators of the two Shaykhs.

Apparently, ‘Umar did not know the Islamic rulings and teachings concerning the inheritance of the grandfather (from his grandchild), kalalah, usury (riba) and the khilafah. He therefore placed the blame on the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi, and accused him of never explaining them to his Ummah. His allegations however directly contradict these verses:
The duty of the Messenger is **only to convey in a clear way**.8

And We have sent down unto you (Muhammad) *al-Dhikr* (i.e. the Qur’an) that you may explain clearly to mankind what is sent down to them.9

Therefore, if the Prophet had not explained clearly a single item of his *risalah*, he would have failed in his mission. Allah however testifies in favour of His Messenger, that he actually conveyed and explained everything clearly to the *Ummah*. This was why He declared the religion completed and perfect:

اﻟﺮﺳﻮل إﻻ اﻟﺒﻼغ اﻟﻤﺒﻴﻦ

وأﻧﺰﻟﻨﺎ إﻟﻴﻚ اﻟﺬﻛﺮ ﻟﺘﺒﻴﻦ ﻟﻠﻨﺎس ﻣﺎ ﻧﺰل إﻟﻴﻬﻢ

And We have sent down unto you (Muhammad) *al-Dhikr* (i.e. the Qur’an) that you may explain clearly to mankind what is sent down to them.

This Day, **I have perfected your religion for you**, completed My Favour upon you, and have chosen for you Islam as your religion.10

This is an unmistakable testimony that the Messenger did explain everything in a clear, explicit and simple manner to his followers. He successfully fulfilled his mission. It was ‘Umar that had once again forgotten completely that the Messenger performed his duty.

One then wonders how ‘Umar handled questions and disputes regarding the inheritance of the grandfather, *kalalah*, usury and the *khilafah* that were brought to his court. He either relied upon his personal opinion – as in the case of *tayammum* – or rather guessed and gambled in his judgments. Another possibility was that he would refer those issues to superior jurists among the Sahabah, *radhiyallah ‘anhum*, for help. In all cases, his competency as even an ordinary judge falls into serious doubt. It gets really worse when one considers that ‘Umar was the sovereign judge, and that there was no right of appeal against his rulings and judgments.

Of the four subjects, ‘Umar had particular difficulty in grasping *kalalah*. He never understood it till his death. So, we will flash light upon it, as this situation reveals some more information about him. Imam Muslim records:

 حدثنا محمد بن أبي بكر المقدمي ومحمد بن المثنى (واللغة لابن المثنى) قالوا حدثنا يحيى بن سعيد حدثنا هشام حدثنا قطاعة عن سالم بن أبي الجعد عن معدان بن أبي طلحة أن عمر بن الخطاب خطب يوم جمعة فذكر نبي الله صلى الله عليه وسلم وذكر أبا بكر ثم قال إلي لا أدع يبدي شيئاً أهمل من الكلاطة ما راجعت رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم في شيء ما راجعته في الكلاطة وما أغلظ لي في شيء ما أغلظ أن ني فيه حتى طعن بأصبعه في صدر

وقال يا عمر ألا تكفيك آية الصيف التي في آخر سورة النساء؟ وإنني إن أعش أقض فيما قضي بها من يقرأ.

‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab delivered a sermon on Friday and mentioned the Prophet of Allah, peace be upon him, and also mentioned Abu Bakr. Then he said, “I do not abandon behind me anything more important than kalalah. **I did not refer to the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, concerning anything as I referred to him concerning kalalah.** And he was never as harsh to me concerning anything as he was harsh to me about it, so much that he struck my chest with his fingers and said, “O ‘Umar, is the **Verse of the Summer**, which is at the end of Surat al-Nisa, not sufficient for you?” If I (‘Umar) lived longer, I would give judge concerning it (i.e. kalalah) with a judgment that would be the precedent for all future judgments concerning it by those who could read the Qur’ān and those who could not read the Qur’ān.”

Imam Ahmad again documents:

أحدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا إسماعيل عن سعيد بن أبي عروبة عن قتادة عن سالم بن أبي الّجعد عن معدان بن أبي طلحة قال قال عمر رضي الله عنه: ما سألت رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم عن شيء أكثر مما سألته عن الكلالجة حتى طمعنا بأصحابه في صدري وقال طعنى بآصابعي<br/>


‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, said: “I never asked the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, about anything more (repeatedly) than I asked him about kalalah so much that he struck my chest with his fingers and said, “O ‘Umar, is the **Verse of the Summer**, which is at the end of Surat al-Nisa, not sufficient for you?””

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ comments:

شِرْط مَسْلِم رَجَالهُ ثِقَة<br/>

Its chain is *sahih* upon the standard of Muslim. Its narrators are *thiqah* (trustworthy). So, ‘Umar’s most difficult topic was kalalah. Although he was basically clueless about the other topics as well, kalalah proved the most stubborn of them to him. He repeatedly questioned the Messenger of Allah about it. It was the Prophet’s job to explain things clearly to him each time, and we believe he did that each time ‘Umar came to him. In the end, the Messenger got frustrated and baffled by ‘Umar’s inability
to comprehend a fairly straightforward topic like *kalalah*, even after several explanations! What exactly is so difficult about it? Moreover, the Prophet thought that there was a verse about *kalalah* at the end of *Surat al-Nisa*, which was fully self-explanatory and ordinarily should be sufficient for anyone without further commentary. Why was ‘Umar still unable to grasp it, despite the verse and the repeated explanations?

Surprisingly, ‘Umar apparently read the *Verse of the Summer* (before or after the Messenger of Allah referred him to it) but could not understand its simple rules. Worse still, the Prophet repeatedly explained it to him, and he nonetheless did not get it! This raises some grave concerns about ‘Umar’s comprehension skills. It also apparently reveals why the Messenger became frustrated and harsh with him.

Does justice dispensation require very high comprehension skills on the part of the judge? We leave the answer to our esteemed reader.

---

2. Abu al-Husayn Muslim b. al-Hajjaj al-Qushayri al-Naysaburi, Ṣahih Muslim (Beirut: Dar Ihya al-Turath al-‘Arabi) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad ‘Abd al-Baqi], vol. 4, p. 2322, # 32 (3032)
4. Ibid
5. Ibid
6. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 1, p. 36, # 246
7. Ibid
8. Qur’an 24:54
9. Qur’an 16:44
10. Qur’an 5:3
12. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 1, p. 26, # 179
13. Ibid
14. It is Qur’an 4:176, usually read together with Qur’an 4:12. Both are about *kalalah*. Meanwhile, the first is generally believed, among the Ahl al-Sunnah, to be about full siblings, while the latter concerns maternal siblings.

---

8. Hadith Al-Qadha, An Age Of Jungle Justice V

As the chief law enforcement officer of the *Ummah*, the *khalifah* has the authority to arrest and prosecute anyone who commits an offence in his presence. There is no requirement anywhere that the crime must be reported to him by someone else before he could arrest and prosecute. Imam ‘Abd al-Razzaq (d. 211
H) records an instance where ‘Umar, as the khalifah, invoked this authority:


‘Umar discovered alcohol in the house of a man from (the tribe of) Thaqif. He (the man) had already been lashed for alcohol consumption in the past. Therefore, he (‘Umar) burnt his house, and asked, “What is your name?” He (the man) replied, “Ruwayshid.” He (‘Umar) retorted, “Rather, you are Fuwaysiq (an abusive word)”.

Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) states about the first narrator:


There are two second narrators. So, this is what al-Hafiz has to say about Second Narrator A:


Both second narrators transmitted from Nafi’, about whom al-Hafiz states:
Nafi', Abu 'Abd Allah al-Madani, freed slave of Ibn 'Umar: *Thiqah* (trustworthy), *thabt* (accurate), a well-known jurist.\(^5\)

Al-Hafiz seals it with these comments about the last narrator:

> صفية بنت أبي عبيد بن مسعود الثقفي زوجب عمر قبل لها إدراك وأدرك الدارقطني وقال العجلي ثقة

Safiyyah b. Abi 'Ubayd b. Mas'ud al-Thaqafiyyah, the wife of Ibn 'Umar. It is said that she met the Prophet, but al-Daraquṭni denies that. Al-'Ijli said: *Thiqah* (trustworthy).\(^6\)

Safiyyah is also a narrator of *Sahih Muslim*.\(^7\)

In summary, the above chain is impeccably *sahih*. Elsewhere, 'Abd al-Razzaq has recorded the exact same report with this chain:

> أخبرنا عبد الرزاق قال: أخبرنا معاصر عن أبيب عن نافع عن صفية

'Abd al-Razzak – Ma'mar – Ayub – Nafi' – Safiyyah\(^8\)

The only new name is Ayub. So, who is he? Al-Hafiz answers:

> أبو بني أبي تميمة جلس السختياني ... أبو بكر البصري ثقة ثبت حجة من كبار الفقهاء العباد

Ayub b. Abi Tamimah al–Sakhtayani, Abu Bakr al–Basri: *Thiqah* (trustworthy), *thabt* (accurate), *hujjah* (an authority in *hadith*), from the greatest jurists and worshippers of Allah.\(^9\)

In other words, the athar about 'Umar is doubly *sahih*!

'Allamah al–Albani (d. 1420 H) also has some further words:

> روى الدوَّلابي في الكني " (1 / 189) عن إبراهيم بن عبد الرحمن بن عوف قال: رأيت عمر أحرق بيت روبيش الثقفي حتى كأنه جمرة أو حمَّة وكان جارنا ببيع الخمر. وسنده صحيح. ورواه عبد الرزاق عن صفية بنت أبي عبيد كما في "الجامع الكبير" (3 / 204 / 1) وأبو عبد في "الأموال" (ص 103) عن ابن عمر وسنده صحيح أيضاً

Al-Dawlabi reported in *al–Kuni* (1/189) on the authority Ibrahim b. 'Abd al–Rahman b. 'Awf that he said: ‘I saw ‘Umar burning the house of Ruwayshid al–Thaqafi until it became like firebrand or a hot spring. He was our neighbour who sold alcohol.’ Its chain is *sahih*.

‘Abd al–Razzaq also narrated on the authority of Safiyyah bint Abi 'Ubayd, as stated in *al–Jami’ al–
Kabirah (3/204/1) as well as Abu ‘Ubayd in al-Amwal (p. 103) on the authority of Ibn ‘Umar, and its chain is sahih too.10

Interestingly, this Ruwayshid was one of the Sahabah! Al-Hafiz states:

Ruwayshid al-Thaqafi, Abu ‘Alaj al-Taifi al-Madani: He met the Prophet. He also had a story with ‘Umar due to his selling of alcoholic drinks. Ibn Abi Dhaib said: Sa’d b. Ibrahim b. ‘Abd al-Rahman b. ‘Awf narrated to us from his father that ‘Umar ordered that the house of Ruwayshid be burnt down. He used to sell alcoholic drinks in it. ‘Umar had warned him to desist, but he never desisted.11

Elsewhere, he reiterates:

Ruwayshid ... al-Thaqafi.... He had a story with ‘Umar concerning his consumption of alcohol.... I have mentioned him among the Sahabah only because whosoever was of that age (as Ruwayshid) during the time of ‘Umar must certainly have been matured during the time of the Prophet, peace be upon him. Also, there was no one from the tribes of Quraysh and Thaqif except that he had accepted Islam and had witnessed the Farewell Hajj with the Prophet, peace be upon him.12

To summarize:

Ruwayshid was one of the Sahabah of the Prophet, from the tribe of Thaqif. He accepted Islam during the Prophet’s lifetime, met the latter, and did the Farewell Hajj with him. During the rule of ‘Umar, Ruwayshid was convicted for alcohol consumption and punished. However, after his conviction and punishment, Ruwayshid went ahead to sell alcohol in his house. ‘Umar warned him to desist from selling alcohol, but he refused to stop. So, ‘Umar burnt his house where he was selling the alcohol.

The story of Ruwayshid flies in the face of repeated Sunni claims about the piety and righteousness of
It is a bit unclear on what ground ‘Umar burned Ruwayshid’s home. Was it to punish him for selling alcohol? Or, was it only an effort to disable him from further trading in alcohol?

One scenario is that the house-burning was inflicted as a judicial punishment. In other words, Ruwayshid was summarily tried, convicted and penalized for trading in alcohol. ‘Umar’ judicial sentence was that his house should be burnt to ashes. However, where did ‘Umar get that idea from? Was it from the Qur’an? Was it from the Sunnah? Imam Muslim records the standard procedure in a case like this:

I heard the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, saying: “None is to be given more than ten strokes of the cane (in punishment) except in the case of punishments immutably fixed by Allah.”

So, the question is whether Allah has immutably fixed the punishment for alcohol sales business or not. Without an iota of doubt, there is no such fixed penalty for it. Therefore, the maximum sentence that can be inflicted upon an alcohol seller is ten lashes. Apparently, ‘Umar did not follow the instructions of Allah in this regard. This brought him face-to-face against this verse:

Whosoever does NOT give rulings, verdicts, judgments, or commands based upon what Allah has revealed, such people are the infidels.

Another scenario is that ‘Umar actually burnt the house down only to forcefully put Ruwayshid out of business, without any intention to touch the latter himself personally for breaking the law. This theory is further strengthened by the fact that ‘Umar had earlier warned Ruwayshid to desist (thereby confirming his full knowledge of the alcohol trade). However, he made no effort whatsoever to arrest or prosecute him. When the latter would not listen to him, he burnt down his house – which also served as his brewery and alcohol store – solely to shut down his business. Normally, a caring government closes or destroys illegal ventures within its control. This is usually to protect the public. In addition to that, the same government proceeds to prosecute the owner of the illegal business for his crime. In the case of Ruwayshid, ‘Umar merely burnt his alcohol store, but allowed him to go scotfree!
A baffling twist to this whole saga is that when another Sahabi was discovered, also engaging in alcohol business, 'Umar simply let him be! He did not arrest him. He did not prosecute him. He did not burn his house! Imam Muslim records:

 حدثنا أبو بكر بن أبي شيبة وزهير بن حرب وإسحاق بن إبراهيم (واللفظ لأبي بكر) قالوا حدثنا سفيان بن عبيدة عن عمر عن طاووس عن ابن عباس قال: بلغ عمر أن سمرة باع خمرا فقال رأاه الله سمرة ألم يعلم أن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم قال لنع الله اليهود حرمت عليهم الشحم فجعلوا فاعوها


‘Umar was informed that Samrah sold alcohol. So, he said, “May Allah curse Samrah! Does he not know that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: ‘May Allah curse the Jews. The fat of animals was made haram for them. But they melt it and sold it.’”

Imam Abu Ya’la (d. 307 H) also documents:

 حدثنا أبو خيثمة و أبو سعيد قالا : حدثنا سفيان بن عبيدة عن عمر عن طاووس عن ابن عباس قال : باع سمرة خمرا فقال عمر : فالف الله سمرة ألم يعلم أن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم قال : لنع الله اليهود حرمت عليهم الشحم فجعلوا فاعوها وأكلوا أثمانها ؟


Samrah sold alcohol. So, ‘Umar said, “May Allah curse Samrah! Does he not know that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, ‘May Allah curse the Jews. The fat of animals was made haram for them. So, they sold it and ate its price.’”

Shaykh Dr. Asad comments:

 إسناده صحيح

Its chain is sahih.

Samrah was a prominent Sahabi. He too traded in alcohol. But, what was ‘Umar’s response? He merely cursed him by name, and that was it! There was no arrest, and no prosecution! Samrah’s house was equally left intact.

Injustice begins the moment a judge begins to show bias towards or against any of the parties before him in any judicial proceedings. He must be completely impartial throughout, and this must be evident in his ruling. The Qur’an commands:

O you who believe! Stand up firmly for justice, as witnesses to Allah, even though it be against yourselves, or your parents, or your kin, be he rich or poor, Allah is more entitled to both (than you). So follow not whims, lest you may avoid justice. And if you distort your witness or refuse to give it, verily Allah is Ever Well-Acquainted with what you do.\(^1\)

During the rule of ‘Umar, a terribly messy case was brought before him involving one of his close friends. Let us see how he handled it. Imam al-Tahawi (d. 321 H) records:
A man went to ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab, may Allah be pleased with him, and testified against al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah. So the colour of ‘Umar changed. Then, another man came and testified. Therefore, the colour of ‘Umar changed (further). Then, another man came and testified. As a result the colour of ‘Umar changed (even further) such that we recognized that in him, and he denied (the charge without investigation) due to that. Lastly, another man came, demonstrating with his hands. So, he (‘Umar) said, “What do you have (to say), O remover of the punishment!” Abu ‘Uthman (the sub-narrator) then shouted to imitate the shout of ‘Umar, such that I (‘Abd al-Karim) was agonized to the point of fainting. He (the fourth man) said, “I saw a disgusting affair.” He (‘Umar) said, “All praise be to Allah Who did not allow Shayṭan to rejoice at the misfortune of the Ummah of Muhammad.” So, he (‘Umar) ordered that those men be whipped (for allegedly lying against al-Mughirah).2

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) has copied it into his al-Irwa, and states about it:

وقلت: وإسناد صحيح

I say: Its chain is sahih.3

Imam al-Haythami (d. 807 H) records further:

وعن أبي عثمان النهدي قال: شهد أبو بكرة ونافع وشبل بن معبد على المجهرة بن شعبة أنهم نظروا إليه كما نظروا إلى المرود في المكحلة فجاء زياد فقال عمر: جاء رجل لا يشهد إلا بحق فقال: رأيت منظراً فيهما وابتياراً قال: فجلدهم عمر الحد

Narrated Abu ‘Uthman al-Hindi:

Abu Bakrah, Nafi’ and Shibl b. Ma’bad testified against al-Mughirah b. Shu‘bah, that they saw it (i.e. the adultery), as they saw the kohl stick (i.e. the male private organ of al-Mughirah) inside the kohl container (i.e. the female private organ of the woman). But Ziyad came, and ‘Umar said, “Here comes a man who will not testify except with the truth.” So, he (Ziyad) said, “I saw a disgusting scene,
and a spectacle.” So, ‘Umar punished them with lashing.

Al-Haythami declares:

رواه الطبراني ورجاله رجال الصحيح

Al-Tabarani records it, and its narrators are narrators of the Sahih.

Imam Ibn Abi Shaybah (d. 235 H) also records:


Abu Bakr – Abu Usamah – ‘Awf – Qasamah b. Zuhayr:

When the issue between Abu Bakrah and al-Mughirah b. Shu’bah occurred, Abu Bakrah said, “Desist from or give up concerning our Salat, because we will not pray behind you.” So, he (al-Mughirah) wrote to ‘Umar about his affair. Therefore, ‘Umar (too) wrote back to al-Mughirah thus: “To begin, an act of yours has been reported to me. If such–and–such (i.e. Abu Bakrah) is corroborated against you, it would have been better for you to have died before this day.” So, he (‘Umar) wrote to him and the witnesses to come to him. When they got to him, they testified, and Abu Bakrah, Shibl b. Ma’bad, and Abu ‘Abd Allah Nafi’ testified. As such, ‘Umar said when these three people testified, “Four (people) oppressed al-Mughirah.” His matter was very unbearable for ‘Umar. So, when Ziyad stood to testify, he (‘Umar) said, “You will testify with the truth, Allah willing.” Then he (Ziyad) testified, saying, “As for adultery, I do not testify in favour of it. However, I saw a disgusting affair.” As a result, ‘Umar said, “Allah Akbar! Punish them!” So, they (the first three witnesses) were lashed. After Abu Bakrah had been beaten, he stood up and said, “I testify that he (al–Mughirah) committed adultery”. So, ‘Umar was about to repeat the punishment upon him. But, ‘Ali said, “If you lash him (again), then you must stone your companion (i.e. al–Mughirah).” Due to this, he (‘Umar) left him, and did not beat him. Thus, he (Abu Bakrah) did not falsely accuse anyone of adultery again after that.

‘Allamah al–Albani has this comment about this exact report:
It is documented by Ibn Abi Shaybah, and from him bu al-Bayhaqi (8/334–335). I say: Its chain is *sahih*.\(^7\)

Imam Ibn Abi Shaybah again documents:


Abu Bakr – Ibn ‘Ilyah – al-Tamimi – Abu ‘Uthman:

After Abu Bakrah and his two companions had testified against al-Mughirah, Ziyad came. So, ‘Umar said, “He is a man who will never testify, Allah willing, except with the truth.” *He (Ziyad) said, “I saw a spectacle and an evil assembly”*. So, ‘Umar said, “Did you see the kohl stick (i.e. the male private organ of al-Mughirah) enter the kohl container (i.e. the female private organ of the woman)?” *He (Ziyad) replied, “No.”* Therefore, he (‘Umar) ordered that they (Abu Bakr and his two companions) be whipped.\(^8\)

‘Allamah al-Albani again copies the above and says:

قلت: وهذا إسناد صحيح على شرط الشيخين.

I say: This chain is *sahih* upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.\(^9\)

So, this is the full picture, as gleaned from the reports:

- Abu Bakrah and some other people filed a criminal complaint of adultery against al-Mughirah b. Shu’bah with ‘Umar.
- Al-Mughirah was a close friend of ‘Umar.
- ‘Umar summoned the accused – who was his friend – and the Abu Bakrah team to his court for the trial.
- As Abu Bakrah and two other people testified, ‘Umar – the judge – increasingly blushed. Convicting and sentencing al-Mughirah was very unbearable for him. So, he dismissively denied the reports of Abu Bakrah and his team.
- It was a case of adultery, and four witnesses were required. Ziyad was the fourth to testify. Like others,
he came all the way from Basra (where al-Mughirah was governor for ‘Umar prior to the trial) to Madinah to testify against al-Mughirah in a case of adultery. But, before he began his testimony, ‘Umar made some direct moves to entice him and to intimidate him.

- First, ‘Umar called him “the remover of the punishment”. This was an obvious suggestion to Ziyad that he must contradict his colleagues. He simply had no other choice but to remove the sentence of death still hanging over the neck of al-Mughirah.

- ‘Umar also described him as the one who would testify with the “truth”. This was another clear signal to him to contradict his colleagues. It showed that the khalifah had blacklisted Ziyad’s colleagues for testifying against al-Mughirah. If Ziyad wanted to get into the good books of the powerful khalifah, he must tell only what ‘Umar would accept as the “truth”.

- Finally, ‘Umar shouted at him, with such distressing force that it could cause some people to pass out! The intention, obviously, was to unsettle and intimidate him. Going against the khalifah could have highly devastating consequences. The message was unmistakable.

- So, Ziyad got the signal, and went against his colleagues. He denied having seen a sexual penetration. One wonders why then he had taken all the pain to come to Madinah from Iraq! Was it not to testify against al-Mughirah for adultery? Something clearly was not right here. Ziyad was altering his testimony in the light of the new circumstances. In any case, he admitted to seeing “a disgusting affair” and “a disgusting scene”, apparently involving al-Mughirah and the accused woman, which involved “an evil assembly” of both accused persons.

- ‘Umar – the judge – became joyous, thanking Allah, and ordered Abu Bakrah and his colleagues to be flogged for allegedly lying against al-Mughirah!

- After the lashing, Abu Bakrah stood up, and re-testified to al-Mughirah’s adultery – despite the clear dangers.

- ‘Umar intended to re-lash him but ‘Ali, as usual, saved Abu Bakrah with his knowledge.

To ‘Umar, this was fair, impartial hearing!

An interesting side to this discussion is that ‘Umar actually did not ordinarily seem to place much value on the Qur’anic requirement for four witnesses in the case of adultery. For instance, he convicted a woman simply for having only a six-month pregnancy! He never asked for any four witnesses. Rather, he did not even request for any testimony from anyone! However, when his close friend was involved, he became extraordinarily strict with the requirement, and displayed brutal bias in favour of the accused throughout the proceedings.

The testimony of Ziyad itself embarrassingly reveals the direct influence of ‘Umar’s intimidation and enticement over the former. Al-Hafiz Ibn Hajar al-‘Asqalani explains the circumstances of al-Mughirah’s
alleged adultery:

The story of al-Mughirah has been transmitted THROUGH SEVERAL CHAINS. Its summary is that al-
Mughirah b. Shu'bah was the governor of Basra for ‘Umar. Abu Bakrah, whose real name was Nafi’ al-
Thaqafi, accused him (of adultery). He (Abu Bakrah) is a well-known Sahabi. There was Abu Bakrah.
There was (also) Nafi’ b. al-Harith b. Kildah al-Thaqafi, who is counted among the Sahabah.

There was Shibl b. Ma’bad b. ‘Utaybah b. al-Harith al-Bajali (as well), and he was considered to be
among those (Sahabah) who witnessed both the Jahiliyyah and the Prophetic era. (Finally), there was
Ziyad b. ‘Ubayd – who was later called Ziyad b. Abi Sufyan – (and he was) his (Abu Bakrah’s) brother
from their grandmother, Sumayyah freed maid of al-Harith b. Kildah.

THEY ALL HAD GATHERED TOGETHER and had seen al-Mughirah in a secret affair with the woman
called al-Riqṭah Umm Jamil bint ‘Amr al-Afqam al-Hilaliyyah, and her husband was al-Hajjaj b.
‘Utaybah b. al-Harith b. ‘Awf al-Jashmi. 10

There were four of them together, including Ziyad. They all together saw al-Mughirah having a secret
affair with Umm Jamil, whose husband was al-Hajjaj. The other three witnesses saw al-Mughirah’s male
organ entering Umm Jamil’s female organ, and all of these three were totally trustworthy Sahabah of the
Messenger, by Sunni standards. How then on earth did Ziyad miss that?! It seems fair to conclude that
he was deliberately concealing the most crucial part of his testimony. It was simply impossible for him
not to have seen what the others saw, especially as he was not described as suffering from any eye
problems.

Moreover, what really did Ziyad mean by having seen “a disgusting affair” between the couple? Was he
not actually implying the adultery of al-Mughirah and Umm Jamil? From the look of things, Ziyad saw
what the three Sahabah saw, but decided to be ambiguous and to double–speak after ‘Umar enticed and
intimidated him. If the khalifah had not intervened, he most probably would have only corroborated his
co–witnesses.

Anyway, there are some damning consequences in this particular case for Sunni Islam. Abu Bakrah,
Shibl and Nafi’ b. al-Harith were Sahabah. Abu Bakrah in particular was a prominent Sahabi, whose
ahadith are documented in the two Sahihs, and in all other authoritative Sunni books, in abundance. Of
special interest is the fact that Abu Bakrah was the main complainant against al-Mughirah, and he never repented from it. After being lashed by ‘Umar, he still reiterated his claim that al-Mughirah was an adulterer. ‘Allamah al-Albani copies a further report in this regard:

Then he (al-Bayhaqi) recorded through the route of ‘Uyaynah b. ‘Abd al-Rahman from his father from Abu Bakrah, and he mentioned the story of al-Mughirah, and (then) said:

We got to ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, and Abu Bakrah testified, as well as Nafi’ and Shibl b. Ma’bad. When Ziyad was called, he said, “I saw a disgusting act.” Therefore, ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, said Allah Akbar, and thereby summoned Abu Bakrah and his two companions and beat them. So, Abu Bakrah said, that is, after he had been punished, “I SWEAR BY ALLAH, I am saying the truth. He (al-Mughirah) did what we have testified against him about.” Therefore, he (‘Umar) intended to beat him (again). But, ‘Ali said, “If you beat this one, then you must stone that one.”

Its chain is sahih too. ‘Uyaynah b. ‘Abd al–Rahman is Ibn Jawshan al-Ghaṭfani and he is thiqah (trustworthy), like his father.

By all accounts therefore, all ahadith by Abu Bakrah must be thrown away by the Ahl al–Sunnah wa al–Jama’ah as fairytales of a “liar”. It is the Order of Allah, as long as he is believed to have failed to prove his charge against al–Mughirah. This is where the great dilemma hides for our Sunni brothers. Allah has stated:

Those who accuse chaste women, and do not produce four witnesses, flog them with eighty stripes, and reject their testimony FOREVER. THEY INDEED ARE THE LIARS, EXCEPT THOSE WHO REPENT thereafter and make corrections. Verily, Allah is Oft–Forgiving, Most Merciful.

He also proclaims:
Why did they not produce four witnesses? Since they have not produced the witnesses, **THEN IN THE SIGHT OF ALLAH, THEY ARE THE LIARS.**\(^\text{14}\)

Imam ‘Abd al-Razzaq (d. 211 H) reiterates the fact which connects Abu Bakrah to the above verses:

‘Abd al-Razzaq – Ma’mar – al-Zuhri – Ibn al-Musayyab:

Three people testified against al-Mughirah b. Shu’bah for adultery. **But Ziyad recoiled.** So, ‘Umar punished the three (with lashing), and said to them, “Repent, and your (future) testimonies will be accepted.” So, two of the men repented **but Abu Bakrah did not repent. Therefore, his testimonies were no longer accepted.** Abu Bakrah was a maternal brother of Ziyad. When what happened in the case of Ziyad occurred, Abu Bakrah swore that he would never again speak to Ziyad. As such, he never again spoke to him till his death.\(^\text{15}\)

The chain is **sahih**, and has been so declared by the top **muhadithun** of the Ahl al-Sunnah. Imam Muslim (d. 261 H), for instance, has relied upon this chain in his **Sahih**:

**حدثنا عبد عبد الرزاق خبرنا عبد الرحمن بن الزهري عن يبن المسبب عن أبي هريرة**


Imam al-Tirmidhi (d. 279 H) also records:

**حدثنا محمود بن غيلان حدثنا عبد الرزاق خبرنا عبد الرحمن بن الزهري عن يبن المسبب عن أبي هريرة**


Al-Tirmidhi comments:

**هذا حديث حسن صحيح**

_This hadith is hasan sahih._\(^\text{18}\)
'Allamah al-Albani also says:

سُحِيَّ

Sahih

19

Imam Ibn Khuzaymah (d. 311 H) has included the chain in his Sahih as well:

شَيْه

19

Dr. Al-A‘zami has this simple verdict:

3

Estadeh Sahih

Its chain is sahih

21

Everything therefore boils down to this insoluble Sunni maze:

Anyone who accuses another of adultery must present four witnesses.

If he is unable to do so, then he must be whipped by the authorities.

He must be asked to repent. If he does, his future testimonies are accepted.

If he refuses to repent, then he becomes a liar in the Sight of Allah, and his testimonies must be rejected till the Hour.

Abu Bakrah accused al-Mughirah, ‘Umar’s close friend and governor over Basra, of adultery, and presented four eye–witnesses (including himself).

All four witnesses came all the way from Iraq to modern–day Saudi Arabia to testify against al–Mughirah in a case of adultery.

However, ‘Umar enticed and intimidated the fourth of them, just as he was about to give his testimony. He (the fourth witness) thereby “recoiled” and made ambiguous, ambivalent statements instead.

So, the case against al–Mughirah failed due to the fourth witness’s action.
Abu Bakrah and the other two witnesses therefore were whipped by ‘Umar. They were thereafter asked by him to repent so that their future testimonies became acceptable. The other two repented (most probably from pressure), while Abu Bakrah swore by Allah that he was truthful in his testimony against al-Mughirah. He preferred to be branded “a liar” by the state, and that his future testimonies be rejected, rather than to falsify what he knew to be the truth.

Abu Bakrah also believed that Ziyad (his maternal brother), who “recoiled”, had wronged him terribly. So, he stopped speaking to Ziyad from that moment till his death!

Whoever believes that Abu Bakrah was wrong in his testimony must also accept that he was “a liar” in the Sight of Allah, due to his refusal to repent. The Qur’an is very explicit in this regard, and gives no exception. As a result, such a person must reject all of Abu Bakrah’s hadith.

However, the Ahl al-Sunnah consider Abu Bakrah to be perfectly trustworthy in everything he said, before and after the incident! Yet, they maintain that ‘Umar was correct to have whipped him!

But, it was either ‘Umar treated Abu Bakrah unjustly, or Abu Bakrah was truly a liar in the Sight of Allah. There is no third option to it.

Our Sunni brothers want to eat their cake and still have it. However, they can only do one of both. Their position on Abu Bakrah is a strategic do–or–die affair, which they can never let go. This, in reality, merely deepens their dilemma. If they accepted that Abu Bakrah, a prominent Sahabi, was a liar in the Sight of Allah, then they would have opened a door that could only lead to the complete collapse of their entire religion in no time! Yet, their pro–Abu Bakrah stance only fuels the theory that al–Mughirah was truly guilty of adultery, but that ‘Umar deliberately manipulated the judicial system to shield his dear friend from justice. Moreover, in the course of doing that, the khalifah inflicted immense injustice upon Abu Bakrah for telling the truth.

1. Qur’an 4:135
5. Ibid
10. Hadith Al-Qadha, An Age Of Jungle Justice

VII

No one ever knew that looking handsome could become a criminal offence until the rule of 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab. The grand Sunni muffasir, Imam al-Alusi (d. 1270 H), proclaims:

 صح أن عمر بن الخطاب رضي الله تعالى عنه غرب نصر بن حاجج إلى البصرة بسبب أنه لجماله افتتن بعض النساء به

It is authentically transmitted that 'Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab, may Allah the Most High pleased be pleased him, banished Nasr b. Hajjaj to Basra because – due to his good looks, some women were obsessed with him.¹

Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) also submits:

وقد أخرج بن سعد والخراجي يسند صحيح عن عبد الله بن بريدة قال بينما عمر بن الخطاب يعين ذات ليلة في خلافته فإذا امرأة تقول هل من سبيل إلى خمر فأشربها أو من سبيل إلى نصر بن حاجج فلما أصبح سأل عليه فأرسل إليه فإذا هو من أحسن الناس شعرا وأصبحهم وجدًا فأمره عمر أن يطم شعره ففعل فخرجت جبهته فازداد
Ibn Sa’d and al-Kharaiti have recorded with a sahih chain from ‘Abd Allah b. Buraydah who narrated:

While ‘Umar b. al-Khattab was on patrol one night during his khilafah, there was a woman (he overheard) saying, “Is there a way to get to alcohol to drink, or a way to get to Nasr b. Hajjaj?” In the morning, he (‘Umar) asked about him (Nasr), and summoned him. He was one of the most beautiful of mankind in terms of the hair, and one of their most good-looking. So, he (‘Umar) ordered him to collect his hair. He did so, and his forehead appeared. As a result, he became even more handsome. He ordered him (again) to wear a turban. But, his beauty increased (nonetheless). So, ‘Umar said, “No! I swear by the One in Whose Hand my life is, you cannot stay WITH ME in the same town”. Therefore, he ordered what befitted him and relocated to Basra.2 Nasr b. al-Hajjaj, one of the Sahabah, committed no other “crime” than that he looked very handsome. For that, he was summarily tried and penalized, forcibly “relocated” to Basra. ‘Umar was the first human being to do this throughout history. However, in April 2013, the Saudi authorities followed his precedent in a very famous, severely embarrassing case3 that caused widespread worldwide mockery of Islam over the internet. Three Emirati men were deported by Riyadh to the United Arab Emirates literally for being “too handsome”!

‘Umar’s reason for banishing Nasr seems even weirder than the “punishment” itself. If we assumed that the khilafah expelled him because “women were obsessed with him”, were there no women in Basra? Apparently, no matter the claims, the true motive behind ‘Umar’s action had nothing to do with women. In fact, the khilafah himself outlined his justification in very clear words: he could not tolerate living in the same city with Nasr. So if ‘Umar had later moved to Basra he would still have re-banished Nasr to another faraway town. From all indications, it seems that the khilafah was only very bitter about the latter’s good looks.

In any case, it is pretty obvious that ‘Umar would never have tolerated the presence of Prophet Yusuf, ‘alaihi al-salam, in Madinah had the latter lived during the former’s rule. These are Allah’s Words concerning His prophet:

And the women in the city said, “The Queen is seeking to seduce her young man (i.e. Yusuf, her slave then). Indeed, she loves him violently. Verily, we see her in plain error.” So when she (the queen) heard of their (the women’s) accusation, she sent for them and prepared a banquet for them; she gave each
one of them a knife (to cut the foodstuff with), and she said (to Yusuf), “Come out before them.” Then, when they saw him, they exalted him AND CUT THEIR HANDS. They said, “Allah forbid! THIS IS NOT A MAN! This is none other than a noble angel!”

These were the women of ancient Egypt. Prophet Yusuf was so handsome that they could not believe that he was even a man! So, one can safely conclude that the noble prophet had superhuman beauty. What strengthens this submission is that these women, in their trance over the sight of him, were absentmindedly cutting their hands with knives, without flinching! With these facts, Nasr b. al–Hajjaj was apparently a very ugly duckling compared to Yusuf b. Ya’qub, the prophet of Allah. Interestingly, the pagan king of Egypt tolerated and honoured Prophet Yusuf in his city, even in his palace! By contrast, if it had been during ‘Umar’s khilafah, he would have banished the prophet to a very distant land! The khalifah simply could not accommodate in his city any man like Nasr or Yusuf.

4. Qur’an 12:30–31


Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) launches a spirited campaign to bring down ‘Ali’s status as the best judge in the Ummah in order to place ‘Umar above him. He simply cannot stomach the possibility of Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali, ‘alaihi al-salam, surpassing the second Sunni khalifah in anything, especially in such highly sensitive, knowledge-based areas as justice dispensation. The reason for these panicky moves can be discerned from these words of our dear Shaykh:

و في الترمذي وفي غيره عنه صلى الله عليه وسلم أنه قال لو لم أبعث فيكم لبعث فيكم عمر و نظف الترمذي لو كان

بديع النبي لكان عمر قال الترمذي حديث حسن

In (Sunan) al–Tirmidhi and others, it is narrated from him, peace and blessings be upon him, that he said, “If I had not been sent as a messenger among you, ‘Umar would have been sent as a messenger among you instead.” The text of al–Tirmidhi reads, “If there were to be a prophet after me, it would have been ‘Umar”. Al–Tirmidhi says: A hasan hadith.1

Elsewhere, he reiterates this:
It is recorded in (Sunan) al-Tirmidhi: “If I had not been sent as a messenger among you, ‘Umar would have been sent as a messenger instead and if there were to be a prophet after me, it would have been ‘Umar”.2

Those two one-sided, sectarian reports establish two realities:

1. ‘Umar and the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alai wa alihi, had equal credentials and abilities to be the master of the prophets, sent to the entirety of mankind till the Hour. Therefore, ‘Umar was a perfect replacement for the Prophet.

2. Due to ‘Umar’s status as the sole match – in qualification – to the Messenger, he was the only one qualified to be the first prophet after Muhammad, had prophethood not ceased.

The bottom-line is that ‘Umar was far better than Abu Bakr in all ways and in all things! So, if ‘Ali were superior to ‘Umar, then he was the master of both the first and the second khalifahs. In any case, those two hadiths are one-sided (and therefore of no probative value in our research), and contradict the Verse of Istafa, the Verse of Ta‘hir and several sahih and mutawatir hadith (such as Hadith al–Ghadir, Hadith al–Manzilah, Hadith al–Tayr, Hadith al–Thaqalayn, etc). The most important part is that both reports about ‘Umar go against well-established historical facts about him, his knowledge and his abilities. From all angles, both hadiths were motivated by polemical motives, and manufactured to “raise the stakes” for the second khalifah.

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah makes an interesting strike:

و ابﻦ خﻼف ﻋﻠٌ ﻓﺎﻟﺪا ﻓﺠﻤﻮﻉ اﻟﺸﺎﻓﻊ و ﻏﻴﺮﻩﺎ ﻗﻮﺍء ﺗﺨﺎﻟﻒ اﻟﻨﺼﻮﺹ ﻫﻨﱵ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﺮ و ﻋﺎ ذﻟﻚ ﻣﺴﻌﻮد و ﺟﻤﻊ ﻣﺤﻤﺪ ﺑﻦ ﻧﺼﺮ اﻟﻤﺮوزی ﻛﺘﺎﺑﺎ ﻛﺒﻴﺮا ﻓﺎ ﻗﺪ وﺟﺪ ﻟﻌﻤﻮ
never uttered anything that falls out of line with simple logic.

But then, did Imam al-Shafi’i and al-Maruzi really compiled books detailing Amir al-Muminin Ali’s “contradictions” to the Qur’an and Sunnah? Well, there is no evidence of any such books in our times! Besides, our dear Shaykh seems confused on the exact authorship of those “books”. First, he claims that both al-Shafi’i and al-Maruzi wrote separate books. However, this is a contrary submission he also makes:

وقد جمع الشافعي ومحمد بن نصر المروزي كتاباً كبيراً فيما لم يأخذ به المسلمون من قول علي لكون قول غيره من الصحابة أتباع للكتاب والسنة

Al-Shafi’i AND Muhammad b. Nasr al-Maruzi compiled a huge book about what the Muslims rejected from the statement of ‘Ali, because the statement of others from the Sahabah were more in compliance with the Qur’an and Sunnah.4

So, it was after all a joint authorship! What exactly do we believe now? Moreover, where exactly is this book? Has anyone in history ever quoted it? Has anyone in history ever referenced it? The reality is that no such book ever existed! Imam al-Subki (d. 773 H) reveals the truth about the book of al-Maruzi:

وقال أبو نذر محمد بن يوسف الفاضلي كان الصدر الأول من مشايخنا يقولون رجال خراسان أربعة ابن المبارك وبحيى وإسحاق بن راهويه ومحمد بن نصر المروزي وقال أبو بكر الصيرفي لو لم يصنف المروزي إلا كتاب الفسامة لكان من أفقه الناس فكيف وقد صنف كتاباً سوياً وقال الشيخ أبو إسحاق الشيرازي صنف محمد هذا كتاباً ضمنها الآثار والفقه وكان من أعلم الناس باختلاف الصحابة ومن بينهم في الأحكام وصنف كتاباً فيما خالف فيه أبو حنيفة عليه وعبد الله رضي الله عنهما

Abu Dharr Muhammad b. Muhammad b. Yusuf al-Qadhi said, “The pioneers among our Shaykhs used to say that the scholars of Khurasan (in Iran) were four: Ibn al-Mubarak, Yahya b. Yahya, Ishaq b. Rahwayh and Muhammad b. Nasr al-Maruzi.” Abu Bakr al-Sayarfi said, “If al-Maruzi had never authored any book except Kitab al-Qasamah alone, he would nonetheless have been among the most knowledgeable of mankind. Meanwhile, he wrote many books other than it.” Shaykh Abu Ishaq al-Shirazi said, “Muhammad (b. Nasr al-Maruzi) wrote books which contained reports and Islamic jurisprudence, and was one of the most knowledgeable of mankind concerning the differences of the Sahabah and those after them on al-ahkam (jurisprudence). He wrote a book concerning the contradictions of Abu Hanifah to ‘Ali and ‘Abd Allah (b. Mas’ud), may Allah be pleased with them both.5

So, the book – in reality – was only about Abu Hanifah’s contradictions to ‘Ali and Ibn Mas’ud! We leave the judgment to the esteemed reader.
There are authentic Sunni reports which further expose the fallacy of the allegations of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah against Amir al-Muminin. For instance, Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) records:


I was sent by the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, to Yemen, and I was young of age. I said, “You are sending me to a people among whom exist disputes, and I have no knowledge in justice dispensation.” He replied, “Verily, Allah will guide your tongue and make your heart firm.” I never have doubt while dispensing justice between any two people ever after.6

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ says:

 صحيح رجال نفاث رجل الشيخين

Sahih, its narrators are trustworthy, narrators of the two Shaykhs7

Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) also records:


The Messenger of Allah, may Allah be pleased with him, sent me to Yemen. So, I said, “O Messenger of Allah, I am a young man, and disputes will be brought to me for judgment, of which I have no knowledge.” Therefore, he placed his hand on my chest, and said, “O Allah, make firm his tongue and guide his heart.” I never have doubt while dispensing justice ever after.8

Al–Hakim comments:

 هذا حديث صحيح على شرط الشيخين.
This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.\(^9\)

Al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) agrees:

> على شرط البخاري ومسلم

\(\text{(Sahih)}\) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim.\(^{10}\)

Imam Abu Dawud (d. 275 H) documents a mutaba’ah for the report of Abu al-Bakhtari:

> حدثنا عمرو بن عون قال: أخبرنا شريك عن سماك عن حنش عن علي عليه السلام قال: "بعتني رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم إلى اليمن فقلت: "أيهما أحدثسن ولا علم لي بالقضاء؟" فقال "إن الله سبحانه وتعالى قد أثبتك وثبت لسانك إذا جلس بينك الخصمان فلا تغضب حتى تسمع من الآخر كما سمعت من الأول. فإنه أجرى أن يكتب لك القضاء?" قال فما زلت قاضياً أو ما شكلت في قضاء بعد.


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, sent me to Yemen as a judge. So, I said, "O Messenger of Allah, you are sending me while I am young of age and have no knowledge of justice dispensation.” Therefore, he said, "Verily, Allah will guide your heart and will make firm your tongue. Whenever two disputants sit in front of you, do not give judgment until you have heard both parties. This will make clear to you the (correct) judgment." I never cease to be a judge, or never have doubt while dispensing justice, ever since.\(^{11}\)

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) says:

حسن\(^{12}\)

Imam Ahmad also records this shahid:

> حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا يحيى بن آدم ثنا إسرائيل عن أبي إسحاق عن حارثة بن مضر عن علي رضي الله عنه قال: "بعتني رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم إلى اليمن فقلت: إنك تبعثني إلى قوم وهم أضل من أفقيين بيئتهم فقال انغيب فإن الله سبحانه وتعالى قد أثبتك وثبت لسانك.

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, sent me to Yemen. So, I said, “You are sending me to a people who are older than me that I should judge between them.” He replied, “Go, for Allah will guide your heart and make firm your tongue.”

Shaykh al-Arna’ūṭ states:

إسناده صحيح

Its chain is sahih

Whenever Amir al-Muminin set out to judge on any matter, Allah would always guide both his heart and his tongue, and would also make them firm. This removes the possibility of error or misguidance in whatsoever judgments he ever gave:

ومن بهد الله فما له من مضل

And whomsoever Allah guides, for him there can be NO misleader.

With this in mind, it is apparent that whosoever attributes errors to the judgments and verdicts of ‘Ali is actually attributing them to Allah as well! So, we ask Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah and his followers: was it Allah Who was “guiding” his heart and his tongue to those “contradictions” to the Qur’an and Sunnah? We seek His refuge from such blasphemy. No truth – whether in narrations or mere submissions – can be in anything that denigrates the Almighty Lord.

2. Ibid, vol. 8, p. 303
4. Ibid, vol. 8, p. 281
6. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 1, p. 83, # 636
7. Ibid
10. Ibid
12. Ibid
13. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut],

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

لا نسلم أن علیا أفضل أهل زمانه بل خير هذه الأمة بعد نبيها أبو بكر ثم عمر كما تثبت ذلك عن علي وغيره

We do not agree that ‘Ali was the overall best of his time. Rather, the best of this Ummah after its Prophet are Abu Bakr, then ‘Umar, as is authentically narrated from ‘Ali and others.¹

It is true that our Sunni brothers consider Abu Bakr to be the best of our Ummah, followed only by ‘Umar. However, during the lifetime of the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi, it was a different story entirely. There is irrefutable evidence in the Sunni books establishing that the Sahabah used to consider Amir al–Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam, to be their best during the lifetime of the Messenger. Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) presents one of such proofs:

حدثنا عبد الله قال حدثني أبي قدنا محمد بن جعفر نا شعبة عن أبي إسحاق عن عبد الرحمن بن يزيد عن علقة عن عبد الله قال : كنا نتحدث أن أفضل أهل المدينة على بن أبي طالب


“We used to say that the overall best of the people of Madinah was ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.”²

“We” (in the hadith)³ apparently refers to the Sahabah generally, and more specifically to the most senior of them living in Madinah. Ibn Mas’ud was obviously making a reference to a past which was then different from the present. This was why he said “we USED TO”. In other words, at that point in time when he was making his statement, things had become different. People were now giving ‘Ali’s place to another person. Ibn Mas’ud was, no doubt, speaking about the time of the Prophet. All the most senior Sahabah and their neighbours were living in Madinah with the Messenger of Allah. The phrase “people of Madinah” originally referred to them (excluding only the Prophet, of course).⁴ These, needless to say, included Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman.
So, is the above report authentic? Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) says about the first narrator:


What about his father? Al-Hafiz answers:


Al-Hafiz also has these comments about the third narrator:

Muhammad b. Ja’far al-Hazali al-Basri, better known as Ghandar: *Thiqah* (trustworthy), *sahih al-kitab* (i.e. *ahadith* from his books are *sahih*) except that there was some negligence in him.

Whatever negligence he had does not affect his *ahadith* from Shu’bah at all. He used to accurately record the latter’s reports. So, he narrated them from his books with perfect precision. Al-Hafiz provides further information in this respect:

Ibn Mahdi said: “We used to benefit from the books of Ghandar on Shu’bah. Waki’ named him *sahih al-kitab*.” Abu Hatim narrated from Muhammad b. Aban al-Balakhi that Ibn Mahdi said: “Ghandar is more accurate than me as far as Shu’bah is concerned.” Ibn al-Mubarak said, “When the people disagree about the *hadith* of Shu’bah, the book of Ghandar used to judge between them.” Ibn Abi Hatim said: “I asked my father about Ghandar and he replied, ‘He was *saduq* (very truthful), and was a teacher and in the *hadith* of Shu’bah, he is *thiqah* (trustworthy).”

The fourth narrator, Shu’bah, is a pillar of Sunni *ahadith*. Al-Hafiz gives the catch-phrases about him:
Shu’bah b. al-Hajjaj b. al-Ward al-‘Atki, their freed slave, Abu Busām al-Wasiṭi, al-‘Basri: Thiqah (trustworthy), hafiz, extremely precise. Al-Thawri used to say: “He was the amir al-muminin (the supreme leader) in al-Hadith.”

Abu Ishaq al-Sabi‘i is the fifth narrator, and al–Hafiz has this to say about him:

‘Amr b. ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Ubayd …. Abu Ishaq al-Sabi‘i: Thiqah (trustworthy); narrated a lot (of ahadith), a great worshipper (of Allah), from the third (ṭabaqat). He became confused (in his narrations) during the end part of his lifetime.

Of course, Shu’bah heard from him before the memory loss. ‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) explains:

Sufyan al–Thawri and Shu’bah also narrated from Abu Ishaq, although both did not mention the Descent. The reports of both of them (from Abu Ishaq) are more authentic, because they both heard from him BEFORE he became confused.

Another relevant point is that Abu Ishaq is a mudalis and has, on the surface, narrated the report of Ibn Mas’ud above is an ‘an–‘an form from ‘Abd al–Rahman b. Yazid. However, the tadlis does NOT, in reality, affect the ‘an–‘an reports of Abu Ishaq – among others – as long as it is Shu’bah narrating from him. Allamah al-Albani states further:
Al-Tirmidhi said: “A hasan sahih hadith, al-Thawri and Shu’bah narrated it from (‘an) Abu Ishaq.”

I say: It is (truly hasan sahih) as he (al-Tirmidhi) has stated, and both of them (i.e. al-Thawri and Shu’bah) narrated from him (i.e. Abu Ishaq) before his confusion. As for Shu’bah, he never narrated anything from him (i.e. Abu Ishaq) except what he (Abu Ishaq) explicitly stated to have directly heard from the person he is narrating from (i.e. tahdith), as stated in his tarjamah (biography). Due to his (Shu’bah’s) narration from him (i.e. Abu Ishaq), the problem of his tadlis is removed.12

In a clearer word, whenever Shu’bah narrates from Abu Ishaq (as in this case of Ibn Mas’ud’s hadith), all the problems associated with the latter’s reports are removed. The former narrated from him before his confusion in his ahadith, and never transmitted any tadlis-infested reports from him. So, whenever Shu’bah narrates an ‘an–‘an report from Abu Ishaq, there actually is tahdith by the latter from his Shaykh. The ‘an–‘an form is only Shu’bah’s convenience style. No wonder, Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) includes this sanad in his Sahih:

 حدثنا سليمان بن حرب حدثنا شعبة عن أبي إسحاق عن عبد الرحمن بن يزيد


This is an ‘an–‘an report by Abu Ishaq from ‘Abd al-Rahman b. Yazid (the same Shaykh as in the athar of Ibn Mas’ud). Nevertheless, Imam al-Bukhari considers the chain to be sahih.

Imam Ahmad b. Hanbal has also documented a similar ‘an–‘an chain:

 حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي قال حدثنا يزيد قال أنا شعبة عن أبي إسحاق عن أبي ميسرة


Al-Arnauṭ comments:

إسناده صحيح على شرط الشيوخين

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.15

‘Allamah al-Albani too authenticates yet another ‘an–‘an chain of Abu Ishaq:

إسناده: حدثنا حفص بن عمر: ثنا شعبة عن أبي إسحاق عن الأسود عن عبد الله.

I say: This chain is sahih upon the standard of al-Bukhari.16

Imam Abu Ya’la (d. 307 H) also documents an ‘an–’an chain by Abu Ishaq, from ‘Abd al-Rahman b. Yazid, like al-Bukhari:


Shaykh Dr. Asad gives this verdict:

إسناده صحيح

Its chain is sahih18

Let us now move to the sixth narrator in the sanad of Ibn Mas’ud’s athar: ‘Abd al–Rahman b. Yazid. The status of ‘Abd al–Rahman as a thiqah (trustworthy) narrator of Sahih al–Bukhari is already well–known. Nonetheless, we are pleased to present this further confirmation by al–Hafiz:

عندما الحصن بن يزيد بن قيس النخعي أبو بكر الكوفي ثقة


Finally, concerning the seventh and last narrator (‘Alqamah), al–Hafiz al–‘Asqalani proclaims with full strength:

علقة بن قيس بن عبد الله النخعي الكوفي ثقة ثبت فقيه عابد


With this, it is absolutely clear and undeniable that Ibn Mas’ud’s report that the Sahabah used to consider ‘Ali as the overall best among them has an impeccably sahih chain. All the narrators are thiqah, and the chain is fully and perfectly connected.
Even then, the same athar has been recorded with a second sahih chain in that same Fadhail al-Sahabah:


“We used to say that the overall best of the people of Madinah was ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.”

We already know the status of Shu’bah, Abu Ishaq and Alqamah. So, let’s find out about these new names.

This is al-Hafiz’s verdict on the first narrator of this new sanad:

Abd Allah b. Muhammad b. ‘Abd al-‘Aziz, Abu al-Qasim al-Baghwi: Al-hafiz, al-saduq (the extremely truthful), the top scholar of his time. I (al-‘Asqalani) say: He has been declared thiqah (trustworthy) by al-Daraqutni, al-Khatib and others. Al-Khatib said, “He was thiqah (trustworthy), accurate, and narrated a lot (of hadith)”.... I (al-‘Asqalani) say: The man is absolutely thiqah (trustworthy).

Concerning his grandfather, al-Hafiz further submits:

Ahmad b. Muni’ b. ‘Abd al-Rahman, Abu Ja’far al-Baghwi....: Thiqah (trustworthy), hafiz.

Abu Qa‘an too is thiqah (trustworthy), as confirmed by al-Hafiz:

Of course, ‘Abd Allah b. Yazid was a junior Sahabi, and therefore needed no investigation. He is automatically thiqah (trustworthy). Al-Hafiz states:
‘Abd Allah b. Yazid b. Zayd b. Husayn al-Ansari al-Khaṭmi: a junior Sahabi. He was the wali (ruler) of Kufah for Ibn al-Zubayr.25

So, we have a second impeccable sanad for the hadith.

2. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Fadhail al-Ṣahabah (Beirut: Muasassat al-Risalah; 1403 H) [annotator: Dr. Wasiyullah Muhammad ‘Abbas], vol. 2, p. 604, # 1033
3. We are calling it a hadith, rather than an athar, because it lays down a consensus of the Ṣahabah, which they had during the lifetime of the Prophet of Allah. It is our firm belief that they could not have formed such a consensus except on the basis of what they had learnt from the Messenger.
4. See Qur’an 9:101 and 9:120
6. Ibid, vol. 1, p. 44, # 96
10. Ibid, vol. 1, p. 739, # 5081
14. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu‘ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 6, p. 182, # 25532
15. Ibid
18. Ibid
20. Ibid, vol. 1, p. 687, # 4697
13. Hadith Al-Tafdhil, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah
 Raises Objections

Our Shaykh (d. 728 H) is obviously not comfortable with the fact that the Sahabah used to consider Amir al-Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam, to be superior to Abu Bakr during the lifetime of the Prophet, sallallahu ‘alai wa alihi. So, he fights back:

The early Shi'is, the companions of ‘Ali, did not doubt the superiority of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar over him. How can they when it has been narrated in mutawatir reports from ‘Ali that he used to say: “The best of this Ummah after its Prophet are Abu Bakr and ‘Umar”? However, some of the Shi’is of ‘Ali used to consider him superior to ‘Uthman, and this issue is more unclear than that. This is why all the Imams of the Ahl al-Sunnah were unanimous on the superiority of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar as reported in mutawatir reports. This was the view of Abu Hanifah, Shafi’i, Malik, Ahmad b. Hanbal, al-Thawri, al-Awza’i, al-Layth b. Sa’d and all the other Imams of the Muslims, from the jurists, the hadith experts, the ascetics and the exegetes, from the early and later generations.1

Here, he is taking the battle even to the Shi’i home ground! According to him, not a single one of those that are followed by the Ahl al-Sunnah, including the Sahabah and Tabi’in, ever believed that Amir al-Muminin was superior to either Abu Bakr or ‘Umar. There was absolute unanimity among them concerning the superiority of the duo over ‘Ali. Moreover, even the early Shi’is – whom he identified as the companions of Amir al-Muminin – shared the same view! Rather, ‘Ali b. Abi Talib himself used to teach his followers that Abu Bakr and ‘Umar were the best of the Ummah after its Messenger. Therefore, all the early Sunnis and Shi’is had a full consensus that both Abu Bakr and ‘Umar were better than ‘Ali in the Sight of Allah.
So, did Ibn Mas'ud tell a lie? We will soon find out which party is telling the truth, and which is not. Our Shaykh proceeds:

We have learned from two Sahih collections that ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar said: “We would consider Abu Bakr to be the best among the Sahabah of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, and then ‘Umar, and then ‘Uthman.”

This is information concerning what the Sahabah believed during the lifetime of the Prophet, peace be upon him, in that they considered Abu Bakr to be the most superior, then ‘Umar, and then ‘Uthman. It has been narrated that this reached the Prophet, peace be upon him, and he did not oppose it.

The plot deepens considerably here. There is a direct contradiction between the reports of Ibn Mas’ud and Ibn ‘Umar. One of them, definitely, was incorrectly attributing things to his colleagues. As such, we must investigate their irreconcilable claims in order to determine which of them reflects the true story.

Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) has documented the submission of Ibn ‘Umar:

During the lifetime of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, we never considered anyone as equal to Abu Bakr, then ‘Umar, and then ‘Umar. Then, we leave the Sahabah of the Prophet, peace be upon him, and we did not consider any of them to be superior to another.”

In simpler terms, the Sahabah – as alleged by Ibn ‘Umar – viewed Abu Bakr to be their best, then ‘Umar, and then ‘Uthman. Apart from the trio, those Sahabah did not consider any other among them to be superior to another. Without doubt, this hadith targets Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali, as it places him on the same level with all other Sahabah, apart from the three khilafahs. Al-Bukhari has even attributed a similar report to him:

This report, however, makes no sense in line with ‘Ali’s documented opinions of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar! Imam Muslim (d. 261 H), for instance, quotes the second khilafah saying to both Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali and ‘Abbas:

When the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, died, Abu Bakr said: “I am the wali of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him.”.... So both of you (‘Ali and ‘Abbas) thought him (i.e. Abu Bakr) to be a liar, sinful, treacherous and dishonest. And Allah knows that he was really truthful, pious, rightly-guided and a follower of the truth. Abu Bakr died and I became the wali of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, and the wali of Abu Bakr. So both of you thought me to be a liar, sinful, treacherous and dishonest.

He considered both Abu Bakr and ‘Umar as sinful, treacherous and dishonest liars! How then could he possibly have graded both people as the best of the Ummah? Does it make sense that Amir al-Muminin thought that sinful, treacherous and dishonest liars were better than himself and everyone else?! Besides, on what basis would he have declared himself an ordinary Muslim – equal with all others – despite everything that Allah and His Prophet had publicly and privately said about him? We believe that Imam ‘Ali was an outstandingly intelligent, sincere believer in Allah and His Messenger, who could never have made such illogical comments. What we find, therefore, in the books of the Ahl al-Sunnah concerning his alleged admission of the superiority of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar over himself are only cheap polemical stunts pulled by some enthusiastic Sunnis.

However, in the case of Ibn ‘Umar, what has been transmitted from him coincides perfectly with his character and beliefs. He certainly believed in the superiority of Abu Bakr, then his father ‘Umar, and then ‘Uthman, above all other Sahabah. Moreover, he never recognized the khilafah of ‘Ali b. Abi Talib, citing a self–made excuse, as al–Hafiz (d. 852 H) confirms:
Ibn ‘Umar did not mention the *khilafah* of ‘Ali only because he did not give *bay’ah* (oath of allegiance) to the latter, due to the difference of opinions concerning him as it is well-known in the *sahih* reports. His (Ibn ‘Umar’s) view was that he would not give *ba’yah* to anyone who was not universally acknowledged (as *khalifah*) by all the people. This was why he also did not give *bay’ah* to Ibn al-Zubayr and ‘Abd al-Malik during their disagreement. *And he gave ba’yah* to Yazid b. Mu’awiyyah, and then to ‘Abd al-Malik b. Marwan after the killing of Ibn al-Zubayr.6

His excuse, of course, was defeated by his *ba’yah* to Yazid b. Mu’awiyyah, the killer of Imam al-Husayn. The *khilafah* of Yazid was never universally accepted. This was why there were repeated revolts against him anyway, resulting in infamous episodes in Islamic history – such as his massacres in Makkah and Madinah, and at Karbala. Interestingly, like his pretext for delegitimizing the *khilafah* of Amir al-Muminin, Ibn ‘Umar’s claim that the Sahabah never considered anyone among themselves as superior to another – apart from Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman – lacks truth! The reality is far different. For instance, Allah states:

> لا يستوي القاعدون من المؤمنين غير أولي الضرر والمجاهدون في سبيل الله بأموالهم وأنفسهم فضل الله المجاهدين بأموالهم وأنفسهم على القاعدين درجة وكلا وعد الله الحسن في فضل الله المجاهدين على القاعدين أجراً عظيماً درجات منه

Not equal are those of the believers who sit (i.e. do not participate in *jihad*) – except those who are disabled – and those who do *jihad* in the Cause of Allah with their wealth and their lives. *Allah has made those who do jihad with their wealth and their lives superior in (spiritual) rank above those who sit*. Unto each, Allah has promised good. But Allah has made those who do *jihad* to be superior to those who sit with a huge reward, ranks from Him.7

The Sahabah were in two groups: those who participated in *jihad* with their wealth and lives and those who held back. Allah declared the former to be superior above the latter in ranks. Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali, of course, never voluntarily missed the battlefield, and he equally *never* fled – not even once – no matter how deadly things became. Moreover, although he was poor, he still spent his little wealth in the Way of Allah. By contrast, Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman have been authentically documented to have fled the battlefield at various times! In other words, they were escaping with *their lives* from *jihad*. They might have done *jihad* with their wealth – which is debatable, anyway. However, they certainly were not doing it with *their lives*. So, why on earth would the Sahabah place Abu Bakr above ‘Ali, despite Allah’s clear verdict? Did they not believe in the Qur’an? Worse still, why would they consider Amir al-Muminin to be equal in rank with those of the Sahabah who used to flee from the battlefield, and with those who used
to stay away from jihad?

The Qur’an adds:

وَمَا لَكُمْ أَلاَّ تُنفِقُوا فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ وَللهِ مِيرَاثُ السَّمَاوَاتِ وَالأَرْضِ لَا يُسوِي مَنْ أَنفَقَ مِنْ قِبْلَ الفَتْحِ وَقَاتِلٌ أَوَّلَهُ... أَعْمَلَ ذِرَاءً مِّنَ الَّذِينَ أَنفَقُوا مِنْ بَعْدِ وَقَاتَلُوا وَكَانَتْ لَهُمُ الْخَيْرَةُ وَاللَّهُ خَيْرُ النَّاسِ.

And what is the matter with you that you do not spend in the Way of Allah? And to Allah belongs the heritage of the heavens and the earth. Not equal among you are those who spent and fought before the Conquest (of Makkah), these ones are higher in (spiritual) rank than those who spent and fought afterwards. But to all, Allah has promised the best. And Allah is All-Aware of what you do. 8

Yet, the Sahabah – according to Ibn ‘Umar – did not believe this verse! Therefore, they used to consider ‘Ali, who spent and fought before the Conquest of Makkah, as equal with others among them who only spent and fought after it. It is indeed a lose-lose situation for our Sunni brothers. If they agreed that the Sahabah believed in and practised the above verses, then they must reject the report of Ibn ‘Umar as only his mere wishful thinkings and hallucinations. On the other hand, if they chose to believe Ibn ‘Umar, in such a case, they would be left with no other choice but to proclaim the kufr of the Sahabah!

2. Ibid, vol. 6, p. 153
4. Ibid, vol. 3, p. 1342, # 3468
7. Qur’an 4:95–96
8. Qur’an 57:10

14. Hadith Al–Tafdhil, is ‘Aishah Really the best of the Ummah?

Officially, Abu Bakr is the best of this Ummah, after its Prophet, sallallahu ʻalaihi wa alihi, according to the Ahl al–Sunnah. ‘Allamah al–Albani (d. 1420 H) for instance submits:
I say: the fact that Abu Bakr, may Allah be pleased with him, was the most beloved of mankind to him (i.e. the Prophet), peace be upon him, is consistent with the fact that he was the best of the rightly guided khilafahs in the view of the Ahl al-Sunnah.  

However, this belief directly contradicts their “authentic” hadith. Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) records:


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, appointed me as commander of the army of Dhat Salasil. So, I got to him, and said, “O Messenger of Allah, which of mankind is the most beloved to you?” He replied, “‘Aishah.” I said, “Who among the men?” He replied, “Her father.” I asked, “Then who?” He replied, “‘Umar”.  

Al-Arnauṭ comments:

إسناده صحيح على شرط الشيخين

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.

In other words, Umm al-Muminin ‘Aishah is the overall best of this Ummah, above Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman, according to the Sunni-only report. It is, however, at this point that things get really messy!

Allah has stated concerning two of the wives of His Prophet:

And when the Prophet disclosed a matter in confidence to one of his wives, so when she told it, and Allah made it known to him, he informed part thereof and left a part. Then when he told her thereof, she
said, “Who told you this?” He said, “The All-Knower, the All-Aware has told me.” **If you two repent to Allah, for your hearts have deviated. But if you both help each other against him, then Allah is His Helper (against you both), and Jibril, and the righteous believers, and furthermore, the angels are his helpers. It may be if he divorced you that his Lord will give him instead of you, wives better than you:** Muslims, believers, obedient, repentant, devoted, fasting – whether previously married or virgins.4

Imam Ibn al-Jawzi (d. 597 H) has this exegesis:

Then He (Allah) addresses ‘Aishah and Hafsah, saying: **If you both repent to Allah**, meaning from helping each other against the Messenger of Allah to hurt him. **For your hearts have deviated**! Ibn ‘Abbas said: “They (the hearts) deviated (zaghat) and committed a sin.” Al–Zajaj said, “They (the hearts) deviated, and deviated from the Truth.” Mujahid said, “We used consider His Words, the Almighty {for your hearts have deviated} has something easy until we found it in the recitation of Ibn Mas’ud as: {for your hearts have deviated (zaghat)}”.

Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) also records:

I hesitated for a (whole) year, and I had intended to ask ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab concerning a verse. But I could not ask him out of fear of him, until he went out for Hajj and I accompanied him. During his return, while we were still on the way, he stepped aside towards an Arak tree to ease himself. So, I waited for him until he finished. I then walked along with him, and said, “O Amir al-Muminin! Who were the two women who helped each other against the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, among his wives?” He replied, **“They were Hafsah and ‘Aishah.”**

There are three things here:

1. Both ‘Aishah, and especially Hafsah, betrayed the confidence of the Messenger of Allah.
3. Both of them literally helped each other *against* him in order to hurt him.

5. The hearts of both of them had deviated from the Truth. This is very obvious, anyway. No one with a clean heart would *ever* help another *against* the Messenger in any circumstance.

Interestingly, the above verses were the last updates by Allah on the hearts of both women. Nothing else was revealed thereafter by Him to discharge them, or to indicate their repentance. It is a matter of great interest then that the deviation of their hearts means they both have little or no hope of salvation in the Hereafter:

The Day wherein neither wealth nor sons will avail, except him who brings to Allah a clean heart.7

The perturbing question here is: how is 'Aishah the best of this Ummah, after its Prophet, despite that she was a deviant in the Sight of Allah? Are our Sunni brothers telling us that Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman were worse than deviants? Besides, Allah mentions the existence of women who would be better wives to His Prophet; if case he divorced ‘Aishah and Hafsah. Does this fact alone not debunk the Sunni *hadith* on the superiority of Umm al–Muminin ‘Aishah as mere sectarian polemical artwork?

---

2. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, *Musnad* (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaout], vol. 4, p. 203, # 17844
3. Ibid
4. Qur’an 66:3–5
7. Qur’an 26:88–89

---

### 15. Hadith Saluni, Investigating Its Authenticity

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

أما قول علي سلتي فإنهما كان يخاطب بهذا أهل الكوفة ليعلمهم العلم والدين فإن غالبهم كانوا جهلاء لم يدركوا النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم وأبا بكر فكان الذين حول منزله هم أكابر أصحاب النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم الذين تعلموا من رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم العلم والدين فكانوا رعية أبي بكر أعلم الأمة وأدمنها وأما الذين
As for the statement of ‘Ali “Ask me”, he only addressed this to the people of Kufah to teach them knowledge and the religion, because most of them were ignorant people who never met the Prophet, peace be upon him. As for Abu Bakr, those who were around his pulpit were the most senior of the Sahabah of the Prophet, peace be upon him, who learnt knowledge and the religion from the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. So, the subjects of Abu Bakr were the most knowledgeable of the Ummah and the best in religious practice. However, those whom ‘Ali was addressing, they were commoners among the Tabi’in, and a lot of them were the evil ones among the Tabi’in. This was why ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, criticized and cursed them, and the Tabi’in in Makkah, Madinah, Syria and Basra were better than them.¹

He equally adds:

The statement of ‘Ali “Ask me” to those with him in Kufah was in this regard. He never said this to Ibn Mas’ud, Mu’adh, Ubayy b. Ka’b, Abu Darda, Salman or others like them, much less saying that to ‘Umar and ‘Uthman. This is why these people were not among those who asked him. They never asked him (anything) – not Mu’adh, not Ubayy, not Ibn Mas’ud and not others from the Sahabah.²

It is obvious from the words of our dear Shaykh that he accepts the authenticity of Hadith Saluni. He is not calling it “a lie” or “a fabrication”, or dha’if or similar terms. Rather, he conceded that the event did happen. However, he attempts to downplay the unmatched significance of the hadith. To him, there is nothing special in it. After all, Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali, ‘alaihi al-salam, was – according to our Shaykh – only offering that challenge to ignorant, evil people. He never dared present it to any of the Sahabah! By contrast, Abu Bakr displayed his knowledge in the blessed presence of the most knowledgeable and the best of this entire Ummah.

In order to weigh the positives and negatives of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s submissions, we must first understand the context of Hadith Saluni. Al-Hafiz Ibn Kathir (d. 774 H) helps on this:

قال شعبة بن الحجاج، عن سماك، عن خالد بن عز عرَّفَهُ أنه سمع عليا وشعبة أيضًا، عن القاسم بن أبي يزة، عن أبي الطفيل، سمع عليا. وثبت أيضًا من غير وجه، عن أمير المؤمنين علي بن أبي طالب: أنه صعد مئير الكوفة فقال: لا تسألوني عن آية في كتاب الله، ولا عن سنة عن رسول الله، إلا أنكَ تألم بذلك.
Shu’bah b. al-Hajjaj, from Simak, from Khalid b. ‘Ar’arah that he heard ‘Ali; and Shu’bah again narrated from al-Qasim b. Abi Barrah from Abu al-Tufayl that he heard ‘Ali; and IT IS ALSO AUTHENTICALLY TRANSMITTED through many chains that Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib climbed the pulpit of Kufah and said, “You will not ask me about ANY verse in the Book of Allah, or about ANY Sunnah from the Messenger of Allah, except that I will inform you of that.”

Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) also records:


I saw Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib, may Allah be pleased with him, saying on the pulpit, “Ask me before you are no longer able to ask me, and you will NEVER be able to ask ANYONE like me after me.”

Al–Hakim says:

حديث صحيح الإسناد

A hadith with a sahih chain

Al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) agrees:

صحيح

Sahih

Imam Ibn Jarir al–Tabari (d. 310 H) further documents:


I heard ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, saying, “You will not ask me about ANY articulate Book
or ANY bygone Sunnah, except that I will tell you.” So, Ibn al–Kawa asked him about al–Zariyat, and he replied, “It is the winds”.6

This same sanad is relied upon by Imam Muslim in his Sahih:


This should be sufficient to establish the status of the above report as sahih. However, the athar proves a very heavy fact – that ‘Ali knew everything in all revealed scriptures as well as everything in the Sunnah of every single prophet and messenger till the Seal of them. This naturally includes the Suhuf, the Tawrah, the Zabur, the Injil, and the Qur’an. Amir al–Muminin had perfect knowledge of them all. He also had complete knowledge of the Sunnah of every single one of the 124,000 prophets sent by Allah. Due to the significance of this athar, we will further confirm its authenticity to remove any possible doubts about it.

Al–Hafiz (d. 852 H) says about its first narrator:

Muhammad b. al-Muthanna b. ‘Ubayd al–‘Unaza, Abu Musa al–Basri.... Thiqah (trustworthy), thabt (accurate).8

Al–Hafiz also has these comments about the second narrator:

Muhammad b. Ja’far–Hazali al–Basri, better known as Ghandar: Thiqah (trustworthy), sahih al–kitab (i.e. ahadith from his books are sahih) except that there was some negligence in him.9

Whatever negligence he had does not affect his ahadith from Shu’bah, the third narrator, at all. He used to accurately record the latter’s reports. So, he narrated them from his books with perfect precision. Al–Hafiz provides further information in this respect:
Ibn Mahdi said: “We used to benefit from the books of Ghandar on Shu’bah. Waki’ named him sahih al-kitab.” Abu Hatim narrated from Muhammad b. Aban al-Balakhi that Ibn Mahdi said: “Ghandar is more accurate than me as far as Shu’bah is concerned.” Ibn al-Mubarak said, “When the people disagree about the hadith of Shu’bah, the book of Ghandar used to judge between them.” Ibn Abi Hatim said: “I asked my father about Ghandar and he replied, ‘He was saduq (very truthful), and was a teacher and in the hadith of Shu’bah, he is thiqah (trustworthy).”

The third narrator, Shu’bah, is a pillar of Sunni ahadith. Al-Hafiz gives the catch-phrases about him:

She‘iba b. al-Hajjaj b. al-Ward al-‘Atqi, their freed slave, Abu Bushtam al-Wasi, al-Basri: Thiqah (trustworthy), hafiz (a hadith scientist), extremely precise. Al-Thawri used to say: “He was the amir al-muminin (the supreme leader) in al-Hadith.”

This is what al-Hafiz establishes about the fourth narrator as well:

Al-Qasim b. Abi Bazzah al-Makki, free slave of Banu Makhzum, the Qari (the Qur’an reciter): Thiqah (trustworthy).

The last narrator, Abu al-Tufayl, was a Sahabi. So, normally, he was absolutely thiqah (trustworthy) by Sunni standards. Al-Hafiz affirms his status:

‘Amir b. Wathilah b. ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Amr b. Jahsh al-Laythi, Abu al-Tufayl. Perhaps, he was named Amr. He was born during the year of Uhud, and he saw the Prophet, peace be upon him. He narrated from Abu Bakr and all those after him. He lived till 110 H, based upon the correct opinion, and was the last of the Sahabah to die, according to (Imam) Muslim and others.

This last fact reveals the fallacy of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s claim that Amir al-Muminin never presented
the challenge to any of the Sahabah! Abu al-Tufayl was in the mosque when Imam ‘Ali made his declaration, and none was excluded from it. We will further investigate this particular unfounded submission of our dear Shaykh, in greater detail, later.

Let us now examine the fourth sahih report of Hadith Saluni from the Sunni books. Imam ‘Abd al-Razzaq records:

عبد الرزاق عن معمر عن وهب بن عبد الله عن أبي الطفيل قال شهدت عليا وهو يخطب وهو يقول سلوتي فوالله لا تسألوني عن شيء يكون إلى يوم القيامة إلا حدثكم به وسلوني عن كتاب الله فوالله ما من آية إلا وأنا أعلم بليل نزلت أم ينهار أم في سهل آم في جبل

‘Abd al-Razzaq – Ma’mar – Wahb b. ‘Abd Allah – Abu al-Tufayl:

I witnessed ‘Ali while he was delivering a sermon and saying, “Ask me! I swear by Allah, you will not ask me about ANYTHING that will occur up till the Day of Resurrection except that I will inform you of it. Ask me about the Book of Allah. I swear by Allah, there is NOT a single verse except that I know whether it was revealed during the night or during the day, or on a level land or on a mountain.”

Al-Hafiz states about the first narrator:

ثقة حافظ


He also says about the second narrator:

معمر بن راشد الأزدي مولاه أبو يرزة البصري نزيل اليمن ثقة ثابت فاضل

Ma’mar b. Rashid al–Azdi, their freed slave, Abu ‘Urwa al–Basri, he lived in Yemen: Thiqah (trustworthy), thabt (accurate), fadhil (meritorious).

What about the third narrator? This is his verdict:

وهب بن عبد الله بن أبي دبي بمحمد مصغرا الهنائي بضم الهاء ونون وود الكوفي وقد ينسب لجده ثقة

Wahb b. ‘Abd Allah b. Abi Dubayy al–Hunai al–Kufi, he has been attributed to his grandfather: Thiqah (trustworthy).
We already know about Abu al-Tufayl. So, this fourth riwayah too is sahih.

A simple summary of the athar is this:

1. ‘Ali challenged the people to ask him about anything. He never limited the challenge. Rather, he left it open: “Ask me!”

3. He claimed perfect knowledge of the Qur’an and Sunnah, as well as of all the revealed scriptures of the past prophets and their respective Sunnahs.

5. He also encouraged them to ask him about anything that would occur till the Hour. He had complete knowledge of that too.

7. He specifically warned the people after once he died, there would never be anyone like him again till the Day of Resurrection.

Apparently, this goes beyond merely scaring some ignorant, evil fellows with some limited knowledge. Rather, the question is: was/is anyone else ever capable of making similar claims?

2. Ibid, vol. 8, p. 57
5. Ibid
12. Ibid, vol. 2, p. 18, # 5469
13. Ibid, vol. 1, p. 464, # 3122
16. Hadith Saluni, Implications Of The Reports

The first and only creature to have ever made claims and offered challenges similar to those in Hadith Saluni was the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa wa alihi. Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records:

Hadith Saluni

The first and only creature to have ever made claims and offered challenges similar to those in Hadith Saluni was the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa wa alihi. Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records:

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, came out when the sun had passed the meridian, and led them in Salat al-Ẓuhr. When he said the salam, he stood upon the pulpit, and mentioned the Hour, and mentioned great affairs that would occur before it. Then he said, “Whosoever wishes to ask me about ANYTHING, let him ask me. I swear by Allah, you will not ask me about ANYTHING except that I will inform you of it as long as I remain in this position of mine.” So, the people wept a lot when they heard that from the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. Then the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, repeatedly said “Ask me!” several times. So, ‘Abd Allah b. Hudhafah stood up and said, “Who is my father, O Messenger of Allah?” He (the Prophet) replied, “Your father is Hudhafah.” When the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, continuously repeated “Ask me!” several times, ‘Umar knelt down and said, “We are well-pleased with Allah as Lord, and with Islam as religion, and with Muhammad as Messenger.” So, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, kept quiet so long as ‘Umar was saying that. Then the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “It is near. I swear by the One in Whose Hand the life of Muhammad is, there was presented to me the Paradise and the Hellfire in the nook of this enclosure, and I did not see as much good and evil as I have seen today.”

Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) also records:

Imam Malik:

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, came out when the sun had passed the meridian, and led them in Salat al-Ẓuhr. When he said the salam, he stood upon the pulpit, and mentioned the Hour, and mentioned great affairs that would occur before it. Then he said, “Whosoever wishes to ask me about ANYTHING, let him ask me. I swear by Allah, you will not ask me about ANYTHING except that I will inform you of it as long as I remain in this position of mine.” So, the people wept a lot when they heard that from the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. Then the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, repeatedly said “Ask me!” several times. So, ‘Abd Allah b. Hudhafah stood up and said, “Who is my father, O Messenger of Allah?” He (the Prophet) replied, “Your father is Hudhafah.” When the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, continuously repeated “Ask me!” several times, ‘Umar knelt down and said, “We are well-pleased with Allah as Lord, and with Islam as religion, and with Muhammad as Messenger.” So, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, kept quiet so long as ‘Umar was saying that. Then the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “It is near. I swear by the One in Whose Hand the life of Muhammad is, there was presented to me the Paradise and the Hellfire in the nook of this enclosure, and I did not see as much good and evil as I have seen today.”

Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) also records:

Imam Malik:
The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “You will not ask me about anything (that will occur) up till the Day of Resurrection except that I will tell you.” So, ‘Abd Allah b. Hudhafah said, “O Messenger of Allah, who is my father?” He replied, “Your father is Hudhafah.”

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ comments:

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.

These were momentous words. He offered them a challenge that was clearly beyond human capability. The Sahabah were awed. They never fathomed the existence of a man who could answer any question about anything – any verse in any revealed scripture, any Sunnah of any prophet, any private secrets of anyone, science, medicine, technology, astronomy, and so on. Anything! Nothing whatsoever was excluded. They were challenged to ask anything about anything! ‘Abd Allah b. Hudhafah exploited the opportunity to verify his paternity – which, of course, was part of “anything”. The other Sahabah were too overwhelmed with awe to ask any question. The Prophet kept challenging them. But, all that they could do was weep. If anyone makes a similar challenge today, he would be humiliated immediately with very simple questions. The only creature that was capable of making the same challenge as the Messenger of Allah had done was none other than Amir al-Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam.

This relevant athar is documented in Fadhail al-Sahabah of Imam Ahmad:

Its chain is sahih
As for Abu Bakr and ‘Umar, both of them did not even have sufficient knowledge of either the Qur’ān or Sunnah – much less anything else! For instance, ‘Umar did not know the basic Islamic ruling on *tayammum*. Imam Muslim records:


A man came to ’Umar and said: “I have seminal discharges and I cannot find water (to do the *ghusl*).”

He (‘Umar) said, “Do not perform *Salat*.6”

Meanwhile, this is the answer to that question in the Qur’ān:

And if you are ill, or on a journey, or one of you comes after answering the call of nature, or you have had sexual intercourse with women and you cannot find water, perform *tayammum* with clean soil and rub therewith your faces and hands.7

‘Umar apparently did not know the verses, or even the explicit Prophetic traditions which also explain the matter. As such, it was naturally impossible for him to have issued *any* challenge to *any* people to ask him *anything*! He completely lacked the capability, and would have been instantly humiliated with such beginner’s topics as *tayammum*. Moreover, as Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) records below, ‘Umar also lacked knowledge of some other topics in Islamic jurisprudence:

Ahmad b. Abi Rajah – Yahya – Abu Hayyan al-Tamimi – Shu‘bi – Ibn ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with them both:

‘Umar delivered a sermon on the pulpit of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, saying, “Verily, there was revealed an order making alcohol *haram*, and it is made from five things: grape, date, wheat, barley and honey. Alcohol is whatsoever clouds the mind. I wish the Messenger of Allah, peace be
upon him, had not left us before he could explain three matters to us: the inheritance of the
grandfather, *kalalah* and various types of *riba* (usury)."^8

But, it was not only ‘Umar. Abu Bakr too, as the *khalifah* – and therefore the chief religious authority of
the Muslims, was asked a beginner’s question by one of his subjects. It however turned out that the
*khalifah* actually had no clue! Allah states:

قَالَتِ ﺃُنَاآ ﺑُرَاءُ ﺗُعَلَّمُونَ إِنِّي أُنزِلْتُهُ ﺑِعَرَبٍ ﻋَرَبِيٌّ ﻟِّإِنْتَهَى ﻟَوْا

That We pour forth water in abundance, and We split the earth in clefts, and We cause therein the grain
to grow, and grapes and clover plants, and olives and date-palms, and gardens, dense with many trees,
and fruits and herbage, a benefit for you and your cattle.\(^9\)

The above verse is in plain Arabic. Allah reveals about His Book:

هَذَا لِسانَ عَرَبِيٍّ ﻣِبَيِّنٌ

This (Qur’an) is a *clear* Arabic tongue.\(^{10}\)

إِنَّا أُنزِلْنَا قُرْآنًا عَرَبِيًّا لِّإِنْتَهَى ﻟَوْا

We have sent it down as an Arabic Qur’an in order that you may understand.\(^{11}\)

إِنَّا ﺗَعَلَّمْنَا قُرْآنًا عَرَبِيًّا لِّإِنْتَهَى ﻟَوْا

Verily, We have made it a Qur’an *in Arabic that you may be able to understand*.\(^{12}\)

Therefore, anyone with a proficient knowledge of the Arabic language will always understand the verses
of the Qur’an – at least in their literal senses – perfectly. During the *khilafah* of Abu Bakr, a man came to
him about the word “herbage” in the above passage. He did not understand what it meant. Perhaps, the
man was a Persian, Roman or African. It is also possible that he was an Arab, but one without a sound
knowledge of his native language. So, how did the *khalifah* explain to him?

Al-Hafiz Ibn Hajar al-‘Asqalani (d. 852 H) records:

وَهُمْ وَجْهٌ أَخْرَىٰ عِنْدَ إِبْرَاهِيمَ النَّخْعَبِيٓ قَالَ قُلْ أَيُّ سَمَا ؤْنَاطُ ضُرُرْنَ أَيُّ سَمَا تَطْلُبُ فِي كُتْبَ اٰللَّهِ بَلَّا أَعْلَمُ وَهُذَا ﻣَنْطَقَ ﺑَيْنَ النَّخْعَبِيٖ
And it is narrated from another chain on the authority of Ibrahim al-Nakha’i:

Abu Bakr al-Siddiq recited “and fruits and herbage”. So, someone asked, “What is herbage?” Another person answered, “It is so-and-so”. Therefore, Abu Bakr said, “This one (i.e. this question) is overburdensome. Which earth will carry me and which sky will shield me if I say concerning the Book of Allah THAT WHICH I HAVE NO KNOWLEDGE OF.”

This is munqati’ (disconnected) between al-Nakha’i and al-Siddiq. It is also recorded through the route of Ibrahim al-Tamimi that Abu Bakr was asked about herbage, what it was, and he replied, “Which sky would shield me…” and he mentioned the like of it (i.e. what Ibrahim al-Nakha’i narrated). This one too is munqati’. However, each one of the two (reports) STRENGTHENS the other.13

So, Abu Bakr, despite being from Quraysh – who spoke the purest Arabic dialect – did not know what “herbage” meant in the Qur’an! Apparently, though an Arab, the first Sunni khalifah had deficient knowledge of his own native language. Considering that the Book of Allah was revealed in “clear” Arabic, that fact alone naturally made him an incompetent interpreter of the divine Scripture.

‘Umar too had a similar condition. Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H) records:

I heard ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, reciting {And We cause therein the grain to grow, and grapes and clover plants, and olives and date-palms, and gardens, dense with many trees, and fruits and herbage}. He said, “We have known all of this. But, what is “herbage”? Then, he broke a stick which was in his hand. So, he said, “This, I swear by the Life of Allah, IS OVERBURDENSOME. Follow (only) what is clear to you from this Book.”14

Al-Hakim says:
This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.\textsuperscript{15}

Al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) concurs:

\[
\text{(Sahih) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim}\textsuperscript{16}
\]

For Allah’s sake, was it possible for Abu Bakr or ‘Umar to issue a challenge like this:

\[
\text{لا تسألوني عن آية في كتاب الله، ولا عن سنة عن رسول الله، إلا أنبأئكم بذلك}
\]

You will not ask me about ANY verse in the Book of Allah, or about ANY Sunnah from the Messenger of Allah, except that I will inform you of that.

\textsuperscript{1} Abu al-Husayn Muslim b. al-Hajjaj al-Qushayri al-Naysaburi, \textit{Ṣahih Muslim} (Beirut: Dar Ihya al-Turath al-‘Arabi) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad ‘Abd al-Baqi], vol. 4, p. 1832, \# 2359 (136)

\textsuperscript{2} Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, \textit{Musnad} (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 3, p. 107, \# 12063

\textsuperscript{3} \textit{Ibid}

\textsuperscript{4} Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, \textit{Fadhail al-Ṣahabah} (Beirut: Muasassat al-Risalah; 1st edition, 1403 H) [annotator: Dr. Wasiyullah Muhammad ‘Abbas], vol. 2, p. 646, \# 1098

\textsuperscript{5} \textit{Ibid}

\textsuperscript{6} Abu al-Husayn Muslim b. al-Hajjaj al-Qushayri al-Naysaburi, \textit{Ṣahih Muslim} (Beirut: Dar Ihya al-Turath al-‘Arabi) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad ‘Abd al-Baqi], vol. 1, p. 280, \# 112

\textsuperscript{7} Qur’an 4:43 and 5:6


\textsuperscript{9} Qur’an 80:25-32

\textsuperscript{10} Qur’an 16:103

\textsuperscript{11} Qur’an 12:2

\textsuperscript{12} Qur’an 43:3


\textsuperscript{15} \textit{Ibid}

\textsuperscript{16} \textit{Ibid}
17. Hadith Saluni, Did The Sahabah Ask ‘Ali?

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) claims:

أما قول علي سلوني ... وأما الذين كان علي يخطبهم فهم من جملة عوام الناس التابعين وكان كثير منهم من شرار التابعين

As for the statement of ‘Ali “Ask me” ... those whom ‘Ali was addressing, they were commoners among the Tabi’in, and a lot of them were the evil ones among the Tabi’in.¹

He clarifies further:

وقول علي لمن عنده الكوفة سلوني هو من هذا الباب لم يقل هذا لابن مسعود ومعاذ وأبي بن كعب وأبي الدرداء وسلمان وأمثالهم ... فلم يسألة قط لا معاذ ولا أبي ولا ابن مسعود ولا من هو دونهم من الصحابة

The statement of ‘Ali “Ask me” TO THOSE WITH HIM IN KUFAH was in this regard. He never said this to Ibn Mas’ud, Mu’adh, Ubayy b. Ka’b, Abu Darda, Salman or others like them.... They never asked him (anything) – not Mu’adh, not Ubayy, not Ibn Mas’ud and NOT others from the Sahabah.²

The patent purpose of the above submissions is to downplay the importance of Amir al-Muminin’s, ‘alaihi as-salam, challenge. However, what really mattered was the quality of the challenge, and not its audience. As we have demonstrated, neither Abu Bakr nor ‘Umar was ever capable of issuing the same challenge as Amir al-Muminin did, not even to school kids. Meanwhile, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah is actually wrong in his claims concerning the people of Kufah, and the Sahabah, with regards to the challenge of ‘Ali.

To get a clearer picture, let us present this narration of Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) :

 حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنيا حسين بن محمد وأبو تعيم المعنى قلنا فئر عن أبي الطفلي قال: جمع علي رضي الله تعالى عنه الناس في الرحبة ثم قال لهم أنشد الله كل أمر مسلم سمع رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم يقول يوم غدير خم ما سمع لما قام فقام ثلاثون من الناس وقال أبو تعيم فقام ناس كثير فشهدوا حين أخذه يبهد فقال للناس أعلمني اولي بالمؤمنين من أنفسهم قالوا نعم يا رسول الله قال من كلب مولاه فذا مولاه اللهم والل من وراح وعاد من عاده قال فخرجت وكان في نفسه شيئا فلقيت زيد بن أرقم فقتله فمات سمعت عليه رضي الله تعالى عنه يقول كذا وكذا قال فما تذكر قد سممت رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم يقول ذلك له

‘Abd Allah (b. Ahmad) – my father (Ahmad b. Hanbal) – Husayn b. Muhammad and Abu Na’im al-Ma’ani – Faṭr – Abu al-Tufayl:
Ali, may Allah the Most High be pleased with him, gathered people at Rahbah (an area in Kufah), and said to them, “I implore with Allah to testify every single Muslim who heard what the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said while standing on the Day of Ghadir Khumm. **So, thirty people stood up** – Abu Na‘im said: lots of people stood up – and testified that while holding his (i.e. ‘Ali’s) hand, he (the Prophet) said to the people, “Do you know that I am more entitled to the believers than themselves?” They replied, “Yes, O Messenger of Allah.” He (the Prophet) said, “Whosoever I am his mawla, this too is his mawla. O Allah, be the friend of whosoever is his friend, and be the enemy of whosoever is his enemy.”

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ states:

إسناده صحيح

Its chain is *sahih*.

All those thirty – or actually, lots of – people who stood up to testify were Sahabah, and they were among the people of Kufah! The challenge of Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali was directed towards them too, along with the other residents of the city. This reality cuts off the first leg of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s apparently fallacious submission.

At this point, it becomes imperative to ask. Did the Sahabah ever consult Amir al-Muminin to gain knowledge in their religion? Our dear Shaykh claims that they never did. But, is that the case? 'Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) replies:

أخرجه ابن أبي شيبة في "المصنف" (2/44/11) من طريق سعيد بن المسيب: "أن رجلا من أهل الشام قال له ابن حبرى وجد مع امرأته رجلا فقتلها ، أو قتلاهما ، فرفع إلى معاوية فأشخاص في ذلك فكتب إلى أبي موسى عن ذلك ، فسأل أبو موسى عليا

Ibn Abi Shaybah recorded it in *al-Musnaf* (2/44/11) from the route of Sa’id b. Jubayr:

A Syrian man called Ibn Habri caught a man with his wife, and therefore killed him or killed both of them. So, his case was brought to Mu’awiyah. However, he had problem on how to do justice in that. **As such, he wrote to Abu Musa to ask ‘Ali concerning that. Therefore, Abu Musa asked ‘Ali.**

The ‘Allamah comments:

قلت: ورجاله نقات ، لكن سعيد بن المسيب مختلف في سماعه من علي

I say: *Its narrators are trustworthy*. However, there is disagreement over whether Sa’id b. Musayyab
heard from ‘Ali or not. 6

Of course, the correct opinion is that he heard from ‘Ali, as declared by al-Hafiz:

سعید بن المسبب بن حزن بن أبي وهب بن عمرو بن عائذ بن عمران ابن مخزوم الفرشي المخزومي، روى عن أبي...


It was only from Abu Bakr that he did not hear directly. As for ‘Umar, ‘Uthman, ‘Ali and all the other people from whom Sa’id b. al-Musayyab heard, they are grouped together in the same unbroken, long list of names. Moreover, Imam al-Tirmidhi (d. 279 H) records this chain:

 أحمد بن منيع حدثنا علي بن زيد بن سعيد بن المسبب عن علي بن أبي طالب


Al-Tirmidhi notably comments:

 الحديث على حسن صحيح

The hadith of ‘Ali is hasan sahih. 9

‘Allamah al-Albani backs him:

 صحيح

Sahih 10

Simply put, the athar from al-Musnaf of Ibn Abi Shaybah has a sahih chain. It is a very interesting narration, indeed. Mu’awiyah – a Sahabi – was the rebel leader who was waging war against Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali, the khalifah. Yet, despite his bloody insurgency, he turned to ‘Ali for solution to his judicial problem. That was an extreme step, which revealed Mu’awiyah’s unconditional acknowledgement that ‘Ali’s knowledge was unmatched and unique. Moreover, Abu Musa, whom Mu’awiyah sent, was another Sahabi who could have offered a solution if he had any! This incident effectively buries the remains of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s claims.
But, there is more! The second rebel leader who also waged a bloody campaign against ‘Ali was Umm al-Muminin ‘Aishah. Imam Ahmad records another interesting narration:

I went to ‘Aishah, may Allah be pleased with her, and asked her about the two \textit{khuffs}. So, she said, “You MUST go to Ibn Abi Talib and ask him, because he used to go on journeys with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him.” So, I went to him and asked him.\textsuperscript{11}

Al-Arnauṭ says:

\textit{Išāna hāna kāhūna Shalāmūn al-salāmūn.}\textsuperscript{12}

Its chain is \textit{sahīh} upon the standard of (Imam) Muslim.\textsuperscript{12}

Imam Abu Ya’la (d. 307 H) further documents:

I asked ‘Aishah concerning wiping over the two \textit{khuffs}. So, she said, “Go to ‘Ali and ask him, because he is more knowledgeable of that than me.” So, I went to ‘Ali and asked him about the wiping.\textsuperscript{13}

Shaykh Dr. Asad comments:

\textit{Išāna hāna kāhūna Shalāmūn al-salāmūn.}\textsuperscript{14}

Its chain is \textit{sahīh}\textsuperscript{14}

One crucial point here is that Shurayh b. Hani was a Sahabi too. Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) states:

Do we really have to make any further comments at this point? Perhaps, we should just close things with these words of Imam Ibn al-Athir (d. 630 H):

ٍوروى يزيد بن هارون عن قطر عن أبي الطفيل قال قال بعض أصحاب النبي لقد كان لعلي من السوابق ما لو أن سابقة منها بين الخلق لسوته خيراً وه ذا أخبار كثيرة تقتصر على هذا منا ولو ذكرنا ما سأله الصحابة مثل عمر وغيره رضي الله عنهم لأطلفنا

Yazid b. Harun narrated from Fa‘ir from Abu al-Tufayl who said, “Some of the Sahabah of the Prophet said: ‘There are certain unmatched qualities and ranks of ‘Ali that if any of them had been distributed among all creation, it would bring good to all of them’. There are LOTS of reports in this regard in his favour. We are only mentioning a few. If we had mentioned what the Sahabah, such as ‘Umar and others, may Allah be pleased with them, had asked him, we would have cited a lot! 16
18. Hadith Al-‘Ilm, Establishing Its Authenticity

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) claims:

قال الراشدي الثالث أنه كان أعلم الناس بعد رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم

و الجواب أن أهل السنة يمنعون ذلك و يقولون ما اتفق عليه علماؤهم أن أعلم الناس بعد رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم أبو بكر ثم عمر وقد ذكر غير واحد الإجماع على أن أبا بكر أعلم الصحابة كلهم

The Rafidhi said: “The third (point) is that he (‘Ali) is the most knowledgeable of mankind after the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him.”

The answer is that the Ahl al-Sunnah reject that and say what their scholars unanimously agree upon that the most knowledgeable of mankind after the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, was Abu Bakr, then ‘Umar. Several people have mentioned the consensus upon the fact that Abu Bakr was the most knowledgeable of all the Sahabah altogether.¹

It is one thing to make a claim. It is another for it to be valid. In exactly what way was Abu Bakr, for instance, more knowledgeable than Amir al-Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam? ‘Ali is the best judge of this entire Ummah – a far better judge than either Abu Bakr or ‘Umar. Justice dispensation, of course, requires very advanced knowledge of the Qur’an and Sunnah. Since Amir al-Muminin was a better judge than both Abu Bakr and ‘Umar, he definitely had better knowledge of the Book of Allah and the traditions of His Messenger, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alichi, than the duo.

Moreover, while ‘Ali had perfect knowledge of the Qur’an and Sunnah, as well as that of all previous Scriptures and Sunnahs, and issued public challenges to this effect, neither Abu Bakr nor ‘Umar even knew the meaning of “herbage” in the Book of Allah! ‘Umar, in particular, lacked knowledge of such topics in Islamic jurisprudence as tayammum, kalalah, riba, inheritance of the grandfather, and whether pregnancy could be only for six months or not! Yet, he was supposedly more knowledgeable than ‘Ali according to the weird logic of some folks.

Our dear Shaykh has cited a general Sunni clerical consensus about Abu Bakr’s scientific superiority over the Ummah. The key question, however, is whether the Messenger of Allah was part of this consensus. If he was not, then such an agreement lacks any merit. Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) records the Prophet’s opinion on the matter:

¹
I was with the Prophet, peace be upon him, one day. Then he said, “Would you like to visit Faṭimah, may Allah be pleased with her?” I said, “Yes.” So, he stood up, leaning on me, and said, “But, someone else apart from you will soon bear its weight and its reward will be for you.” It was as though I was carrying nothing until we entered upon Faṭimah, peace be upon her. He (the Prophet) said to her, “How do you feel?” She answered, “By Allah, my grief has intensified, my want has worsened and my sickness has lasted long.” He said, “Are you not satisfied that I have married you to the one who was the first of my Ummah to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them?”

---


Ahmad and al-Tabarani recorded it with narrators who have (all) been graded thiqah (trustworthy). At another place, al-Haythami again comments on the same hadith with the same chain:

But Shaykh al-Arnauṭ disagrees:

Its chain is dha’if.
Ahmad (5/26) recorded it, and from his route Ibn Asakir (12/89/1).

I say: This chain is *dha'if*. Its narrators are *thiqah* (trustworthy), except Khalid b. Tahman for the majority declared him *dha'if*. Ib Ma'in said, “He is *dha'if*. He became confused ten years before his death. But, before that he was *thiqah* (trustworthy).”

So, both Imam al-Haythami and ‘Allamah al-Albani agree that all the narrators except Khalid were *thiqah* (trustworthy). However, while al–Haythami maintains that even Khalid was graded unconditionally *thiqah* (trustworthy), al–Albani argues that the majority actually considered him *dha'if*. In a rather weird move, ‘Allamah al–Albani makes no attempt to, at least, list out the names of some of these “majority”. The best that he has offered is only one name: Yahya b. Ma'in! Interestingly, the same ‘Allamah even goes ahead to refute himself elsewhere:

As for Abu al–‘Ala al–Khafaf, his name is Khalid b. Tahman, and he is *saduq* (very truthful), although he became confused. As for Abu al–‘Ala al–Khafaf, his name is Khalid b. Tahman, and he is *saduq* (very truthful), although he became confused. As for Abu al–‘Ala al–Khafaf, his name is Khalid b. Tahman, and he is *saduq* (very truthful), although he became confused.

This is the correct view, according to al–Hafiz (d. 852 H) as well:

Khalid b. Tahman al–Kufi, and he is Khalid b. Abi Khalid, and he is Abu al–‘Ala al–Khafaf, well–known with his *kunya* (nickname): *Saduq* (very truthful), accused of Shi’ism. He later became confused.

Imam al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) has the same opinion:

quoting the exact report above, the ‘Allamah states:

قلت: وهذا إسناد ضعيف; رجاله ثقات; غير خالد بن طهمان; فضعفه الأخذرون. وقال ابن معين: “ضعيف خطط قبل موته عشر سنين، وكان قبل ذلك ثقة.”
Khalid b. Tahman Abu al-‘Ala al-Kufi, al-Khafaf, he narrated from Anas and a number (of others) while al-Faryabi and Ahmad b. Yunus (also) narrated from him: Saduq (*very truthful*), a Shi‘i. Ibn Ma‘in declared him *dha‘if*. 

Apparently, Khalid was *thiqah* (trustworthy) or at least saduq *very truthful*). However, ten years before his death, his memory faded. In line with the Sunni *hadith* principles, when a reliable narrator with a failed memory transmits a report, we first ask if the specific report under study was narrated by him before or during his illness. If there is clear evidence that he transmitted the *hadith* during his days with a sound memory, then it is accepted from him unconditionally. However, in all other cases, a further question is asked. Was his memory failure a serious one or not? The answer to that, as we will prove shortly, determines the final step. Meanwhile, ‘Allamah al-Albani here gives explanations on the case of a narrator with a *serious* memory failure:

I say: He is *thiqah* (trustworthy) despite his confusion. A confused narrator like him has three statuses:

1. To know that he narrated the *hadith* before the confusion.
2. To know that he narrated the *hadith* during the confusion.
3. Not knowing whether he narrated it before or after.

*It is only in the first status that his *ahadith* are accepted as *hujjah* (authority), and not in the other two statuses.*

The first question then is: did Khalid narrate *Hadith al-‘Ilm* to Abu Ahmad before his confusion or otherwise?
There is a difference of opinion on this. For instance, Imam al-Ghazali (d. 505 H) states:

وأصحابنا والأثربن من الحديث مذهب من بسارد ومضات النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم ذات يوم فقال هل في فاطمة تعودوا الحديث وفيه أنت ترضون أن زوجتك أقدم أمتي سلم وأكثرهم علمًا وأعظمهم حلمًا وإسناده صحيح

Ahmad and al-Tabarani narrated from the hadith of Ma‘qil b. Yasar: “I helped the Prophet, peace be upon him, to perform ablution one day. Then he said, ‘Would you like to visit Faṭimah?’” Part of the hadith is this: “‘Are you not satisfied that I have married you to the one who was the first of my Ummah to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them?’” Its chain is sahih.11

He apparently believes that Abu Ahmad heard the hadith from Khalid before the latter’s confusion. Meanwhile, ‘Allamah al-Albani and Shaykh al-Arnauṭ disagree. To them, he transmitted the report during the last ten years of his life. For the purpose of our research, we stick with the duo. Therefore, we will proceed in our investigation on the basis of an unproved assumption that Khalid narrated Hadith al-‘Ilm with a failed memory.

The next question then is: did Khalid have a serious memory problem? Imam Ibn Hibban says “no”:

خالد بن طهمن .. يخطئ وبهم

Khalid b. Tahman.... He made mistakes and hallucinated.12

That expression is used only in mild cases. Where the memory failure is serious, the muhadithun of the Ahl al-Sunnah employ terms like “he made mistakes a lot”13 and “he hallucinated a lot”14. Khalid did NOT make mistakes a lot, and never hallucinated a lot. Truly, his memory failure caused him to make mistakes, and to hallucinate. But, things were never serious. His mistakes and hallucinations were only occasional. Therefore, he still transmitted completely authentic ahadith during those last ten years of his lifetime. So, ‘Allamah al-Albani tells us about another narrator who was exactly like Khalid:

والجريري – اسمه سعيد بن إياض – محتج به في "الصحيحين"؛ وإن كان اختلط قبل موته بثلاث سنين، ولكن لم يفحص اختلاطه، وكانه لهذا اختلط به ابن حبان في "صحيحه" تبعًا لـ "الصحيحين"، وأكثر هو عنه، فتمثله ينبغي أن يحتج به ما لم يظهر خطأه، فإذا توعد أو كان له شواهد – كما هو الشأن في حديثه هذا – فلا يضر غرابينه فيه إن شاء الله تعالى.

Al-Jurayri – and his name is Sa‘id b. Iyas – IS RELIED UPON AS A HUJJAH IN THE TWO SAHIHS, despite he became confused three years before his death. HOWEVER, HIS CONFUSION WAS NOT SERIOUS. Perhaps, it was for this reason that Ibn Hibban has (also) relied upon him as a hujjah in
his Sahih, copying the two Sahihs, and has narrated a lot from him. **In the case of a narrator like him, it is appropriate to take him as a hujjah where his mistake is not evident.** So, where he is supported by another narrator in narrating the same report from the same person, or there are corroborating reports – as in the case of this hadith – then his oddness does no harm to it insha Allah Ta’la.\(^\text{15}\)

Armed with this information, one can confidently say that *Hadith al-’Ilm*, as narrated by Khalid – even without support or corroboration – is at least hasan in itself. Imam al-Tirmidhi\(^\text{16}\) and Shaykh Dr. Asad\(^\text{17}\) also grade the chain of Khalid b. Tahman as hasan, while Imam al-Hakim maintains that his sanad is actually solidly sahih.\(^\text{18}\) As such, the verdicts of both ‘Allamah al-Albani and Shaykh al-Arnauṭ concerning *Hadith al-’Ilm* are hasty and contrary to evidence. What is more? There also are a lot of corroborating reports testifying for the hadith!

‘Allamah al–Hindi (d. 975 H) records one of such corroborating ahadith:


Narrated ‘Ali:

Abu Bakr and ‘Umar sought the hand of Faṭimah in marriage from the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. But, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, refused their proposals. So, ‘Umar said, “You are for her, O ‘Ali.” He (‘Ali) said, “What do I have apart from my armour, my camel and my sword?” So, ‘Ali approached the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, one day and he (the Prophet) said, “O ‘Ali! Do you have anything?” He replied, “My camel and my armour.” I mortgaged both of them. So, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, married Faṭimah to me. When the news got to Faṭimah, she wept. As a result, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, went to her and said, “Why are you weeping, O Faṭimah? I swear by Allah, I have married you to the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them, and the first of them to accept Islam.”\(^\text{19}\)

Al–Hindi comments:

ابن جرير وصحبه والدولي في الذريه الطاهرة

Ibn Jarir (al–Tabari) recorded it **AND DECLARED IT SAHIH.** Al–Dawlabi also recorded it in *al–Dhurriyah al–Tahirah*.\(^\text{20}\)

Imam al–Tabarani (d. 360 H) records another:
Verily, ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, when he married Faṭimah, may Allah be pleased with her, she said to the Prophet, peace be upon him, “You married me to a bleary-eyed man with a big belly.” So, the Prophet, peace be upon him, said, “I have married you to him because he was the first of my Sahabah to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them.”

Commenting on this report, Imam al-Haythami states:

رواه الطيراني وهو مرسل صحيح الإسناد

Al-Tabarani records it, and it is mursal WITH A SAHIH CHAIN.

2. Abu 'Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 5, p. 26, # 20322
4. Ibid, vol. 9, p. 123, # 14595
5. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 5, p. 26, # 20322
19. Hadith Al-‘Ilm, Proving Its Tawattur

This hadith has been narrated by a large number of the Sahabah. We will be presenting some of them, within the limits of the length of our book. To save space, we will be quoting only the chains and the words of the Prophet as reported by each Sahabi, except where doing this is unnecessary. Imam Ibn Asakir (d. 571 H) records the first riwayah:

أخبرنا أبو القاسم بن السمرقندي أنا عاصم بن الحسن بن محمد بن عاصم أنا أبو عمر بن مهدي أنا أبو العباس بن عقيدة نا الفضل بن يوسف الجعفي نا محمد بن عكاشة أنا أبو المغرور وهو حميد بن المثنى عن يحيى بن طلحة التهديد عن أبو بكر بن الحج عن أبي إسحاق السبيعي عن الحارث عن علي قال:

إن فاطمة شكت إلى رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم فقال "ألا ترضين أن زوجتك أقدم أمتي سلم وأحمدهم حلمًا وأكثرهم علمًا


Verily, Faťimah complained to the Messenger of Allah. So he said, “Are you not pleased that your husband was the first of my Ummah to accept Islam, and the most clement of them, and the most knowledgeable of them”?
He records also:

أخبرنا أبو القاسم عبد الصمد بن محمد بن عبد الله أنا أبو الحسن علي بن محمد بن أحمد بن محمد بن موسى قال:

نَا أحمد بن محمد بن سعود بن عقدة أنا أحمد بن يحيى وأحمد بن موسى بن إسحاق قلنا نا ضرار بن صدر نا عبد الكريم بن يعفور عن جابر عن أبي الضحى عن مسروق عن عاشبة قالت حدثني فاطمة أبنة محمد أن النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم قال لها زوجتيك أعلم المؤمنين علما وأقدمنهم سلما وأفضلهم حلما


Fa‘imah, the daughter of Muhammad, told me that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said to her, “Your husband is the most knowledgeable of the believers, and the first of them to accept Islam, and the most clement of them.”

Ibn Asakir proceeds to cite a further sanad for the report of ‘Aishah from Fa‘imah. Then he records:


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said to Fa‘imah: “Your husband was the first of them to accept Islam, and the most clement of them, and the most knowledgeable of them.”

Of course, Imam Ahmad documents his own report with a hasan chain:

 حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي نا أبو أحمد نا خالد يعني بن طهمنان عن نافع بن أبي نافع عن معقل بن يسار قال: .... قال أبو نما لنضن أبي زوجتيك أقدمني أمتى أمتى وأقدمنهم علما وأعظمهم حلما


.... He (the Prophet) said (to Faatimah), “Are you not satisfied that I have married you to the one who was the first of my Ummah to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said... “O Faṭimah! Are you not pleased that your husband was the first of them to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them?”

Imam al–Tabarani (d. 360 H) has a relevant report too:


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, complained in my room. So, Faṭimah came to him, walking. I swear by the One in Whose Hand is ‘Aishah’s life, her style of walking was the same as that of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. Therefore, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, told her something privately. She therefore wept. Then he told her another thing privately, and she laughed. So, I said, “I do not think it is appropriate to laugh on a day like this, which is more deserving of weeping.”

I said, “O Faṭimah, tell me what he told you.” She replied, “I will not as long as the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him,…”
peace be upon him, sees your place (i.e. is alive).” Therefore, when the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, passed away, I asked her, and she said, “The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: ‘Verily, Jibril used to present the Qur’an to me once every year, but has presented it twice to me this year. I do not see except that I have been called (into the Presence of Allah) and I will answer (i.e. die soon). Therefore, fear Allah.’ So, I became sad. Then he told me privately and said, ‘Are you not pleased that your husband was the first of all Muslims to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them? For verily you are the mistress of the women of my Ummah, as Maryam was the mistress of the women of her people?’”

Imam al-Daraquṭni (d. 385 H) is not left out either:

He was asked about the hadith of Abu Ishaq, from al-Bara, from Fa’imah, daughter of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him:

When ‘Ali married her, she said (to her father), “You have married me to someone with excited legs, and a big belly.” So, he (the Prophet) replied, “Verily, he was the first of them to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them.”

He (al-Daraquṭni) said: “Abu Ishaq al-Sabi’i narrated it, and it is differently narrated from him. So, ‘Umar b. Al-Muthanna narrated it.” The Shaykh (al-Daraquṭni) was asked about him, and he replied, “I do not know him except in this (hadith) from Abu Ishaq, from al-Bara. But Ishaq b. Ibrahim al-Azdi, a Kufan Shi‘i Shaykh, narrated differently from him and narrated it from Abu Ishaq from Zayd b. Arqam.

Let’s see what ‘Allamah al-Khawarazmi (d. 568 H) has on the matter as well:
The Prophet, peace be upon him and his family, was sick. So, Faṭīmah visited him. When she saw how the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him and his family, was, in terms of struggle and weakness, she shed tears and wept till there were tears on her cheeks. Therefore, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him and his family, said, “O Faṭīmah! It is through Allah’s Honour of you that your husband was the first of them to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them.”

Imam al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) says about al-Khawarazmi:

الموقف بن أحمد بن محمد أبو المؤيد المكية، العلامة، خطيب خوارزم.

Al-Muwaffaq b. Ahmad b. Muhammad, Abu Muayyad al-Makki: The ‘allamah (great scholar), the preacher of Khawarazm.

So, let us return to ‘Allamah al-Khawarazmi:

وأنتياني مهذب الأئمة أبو المظفر عبد الملك بن علي بن محمد الهمداني – نزيل بغداد – أخبرنا محمد بن عبد الباقي بن محمد الأنصاري وأبو القاسم هبة الله بن عبد الواحد بن الحسين، قال: أخبرنا أبو القاسم علي بن الحسن التنوخي إنا، أخبرنا أبو بكر أحمد بن إبراهيم بن عبد الصمد بن الحسن بن محمد بن شاذان البراز، حدثنا أبو بكر محمد بن الحسن بن الحسن بن الخطاب بن قتات بن حيان العجلة – قراءة عليا ممن فظه ومن كتابه – حدثنا الحسن بن محمد الصفار الضريء، حدثنا عبد الوهاب بن جرب، حدثنا محمد بن عمر بن أيوب، عن عاصم الأحول، عن ابن سيرين، عن أم سلمة وسلمان الفارسي وعلي بن أبي طالب عليه السلام قال: لما أدركنا فاطمة بنت رسول الله مدرك النساء ... فقال لها رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله ... ان زوجتك أقدرهم سلما وأكثرهم علماء وأعظمهم خليما...
accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them.” 11

Imam al–Jahiz (d. 255 H) even has some further crucial information:

‘Ubayd Allah b. Musa, al–Fadhl b. Dukayn and al–Hasan b. ‘A‘īyyah – Khalid b. Tahman – Nafi’ b. Abi Nafi’ – Ma‘qil b. Yasar: ... He (the Prophet) said to her (Faṭimah): “Are you not satisfied that I have married you to the one who was the first of my Ummah to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them?” She replied, “I am pleased, O Messenger of Allah.”

This report has been narrated by Yahya b. ‘Abd al–Hamid and ‘Abd al–Salam b. Salih from Qays b. al–Rabi’ from Abu Ayub al–Ansari with its text or a similar one.


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him ... said, “O Faṭimah! Verily, Allah has commanded me to marry you to the first of them to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them, and the most clement of them....
He (al-Jahiz) said: This report was narrated by a group of the Sahabah. Among them were Asma b. 'Umays, Umm Ayman, Ibn 'Abbas, and Jabir b. 'Abd Allah.  

Imam Ibn Asakir has the closing report:


Faṭimah said, “You have married me to ‘Ali with excited legs, and a big belly, and who hardly walks.” So, the Prophet, peace be upon him, replied, “I have married you, my daughter, to the most clement of them, and the first of them to accept Islam, and the most knowledgeable of them.”

The following are therefore the Sahabah who have narrated Hadith al-‘Ilm:

1. ‘Aishah bint Abi Bakr
2. ‘Ali b. Abi Talib
3. Abu Ayub al-Ansari
4. Anas b. Malik
5. Asma b. ‘Umays
6. Buraydah
7. Fatimah b. Muhammad
8. Ibn ‘Abbas
10. Ma’qil b. Yasar
11. Salman al-Farisi
This fact makes the *hadith mutawatir*, and therefore absolutely true, far above even the level of *sahih ahadith*!

2. Ibid, vol. 42, p. 132
3. Ibid
5. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaout], vol. 5, p. 26, # 20322

20. Hadith Al-‘Ilm, Some Further Shawahid

Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) records:

I was in Madinah. While I was moving around in the market, oil stones arrived. So, I saw some people crowding around a Persian man who was riding an animal and cursing ‘Ali b. Abi Talib. People stood round him when Sa’d b. Abi Waqqas turned and stood in front of them and he asked, “What is this?” They replied, “A man cursing ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.” So, Sa’d moved forward and they made way for him until he stood before him and said, “O you! On what basis do you curse ‘Ali b. Abi Talib? Is he not the first to accept Islam? Is he not the first to perform Salat with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him? Is he not the most ascetic of mankind? Is he not the most knowledgeable of mankind?” He mentioned (the merits of ‘Ali) until he said, “Is he not the son-in-law of the Messenger of Allah, who married his daughter? Is he not the flagbearer of the Messenger of Allah in his battles?” Then he faced the Qiblah and raised his hand and said, “O Allah! This one curses one of your beloved friends. Therefore, do not let this crowd disperse before you show them Your Power.”

Qays said: “By Allah, we had not dispersed when the animal capsized him and threw him on his head into those stones. So, his brain broke open and he died.”

Al-Hakim declares:

هذا حديث صحيح الإسناد

This hadith has a sahih chain.

Al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) confirms:

على شرط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahi) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim

Of course, the context of Sa’d’s words is clear. After the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi, Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib, ‘alaihi al-salam, is the most knowledgeable of all mankind, from the beginning of existence till the Hour. That naturally includes both Abu Bakr and ‘Umar. This is a very
powerful testimony from one of the most senior Sahabah, and one of the earliest Muslims. Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) claims the *ijma* of Sunni *'ulama* that Abu Bakr and 'Umar were more knowledgeable than 'Ali. Apparently, Sa’d b. Abi Waqqas, *radhiyallahu ‘anhu*, was not part of that consensus, nor was the Messenger of Allah!

Imam Hasan b. 'Ali, *‘alaihi al-salam*, is the best of the Ahl al-Bayt, *‘alaihim al-salam*, after the Prophet and Amir al-Muminin. Imam Ahmad b. Hanbal (d. 241 H) records his opinion too:


Al-Hasan b. ‘Ali delivered a sermon to us after the killing of ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, and said: “Verily, a man has left you yesterday. The *awwalun* (people of old) never surpassed him in knowledge, and the *akhirun* (later ones) never reach his level (in knowledge).”

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ says:

Hasan

This confirms the words of Sa’d. None among those who had died among the Sahabah – including Abu Bakr and ‘Umar – ever reached the level of Amir al-Muminin in knowledge. In fact, none among all past human generations from Adam was ever more knowledgeable than ‘Ali. Moreover, apart from Muhammad himself, no other human being in our Ummah has ever attained, and none will ever reach, ‘Ali’s level in knowledge till the Day of Resurrection. Apparently, al–Hasan too was not part of the so-called consensus of Sunni *'ulama*!

Let us seal this with the words of a top-ranking Sunni scholar. His name was ‘Aṭa. Imam al-Dhahabi proclaims about him:

‘Aṭa b. Abi Rabah, the master of the Tabi’in in knowledge, piety, and generosity during his era in Makkah. He narrated from ‘Aishah, Abu Hurayrah and the senior (Sahabah). He lived 90 years or a little over. He was an *hujjah* (authority), an Imam of great significance. Abu Hanifah learned from him,
and said, “I have never seen anyone like him”.  

Al-Hafiz also submits:

‘Aṭa b. Abi Rabah.... He lived in Makkah. He was one of the jurists and Imams.  

So, was this great Imam part of the alleged “consensus”? Imam Ibn Abi Shaybah (d. 235 H) records:

I said to ‘Aṭa: “Was there ANYONE among the Sahabah of the Messenger of Allah who was more knowledgeable than ‘Ali?” He replied, “I swear by Allah, I do NOT know any such person!”  

Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) states about the first narrator:

Abdah b. Sulayman al-Kalabi, Abu Muhammad al-Kufi, it is said that his name was ‘Abd al-Rahman:  

Thiqah (trustworthy), thabt (accurate).  

Concerning the second narrator, he says:

Abd al-Malik b. Abi Sulayman Maysarah al-‘Arzami: Saduq (very truthful), he had hallucinations.  

The chain is therefore hasan due to ‘Abd al-Malik.
later in time than the awwalun, and that only refers to humanity since Muhammad.

6. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al–Amuat], vol. 1, p. 199, # 1720

7. Ibid

8. Generalized statements like that of Imam al–Hasan were always made against the backdrop of an implied understanding that the Messenger of Allah was excluded. We already quoted in this book a sahih hadith with this wording: “We used to say that the best judge among the people of Madinah was ‘Ali b. Abul Ṭalib, may Allah be pleased”. Of course, Prophet Muhammad too was living in Madinah at those same times! However, this speaker intended to say “the people of Madinah apart from the Messenger of Allah” but dropped the last part because it was patently unnecessary.


Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) admits that Amir al–Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam, was the first human being ever to accept Islam from the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi:

ثم فيه قول علي صليت ستة أشهر قبل الناس هذا مما يعلم بطلانه بالضرورة فإن بين إسلامه وإسلام زيد وأبي بكر وخديجة يوما أو نحوه فكيف يصلي قبل الناس ستة أشهر

Then, in it (i.e. the report) is the statement “‘Ali performed Salat six months before anyone else”, this (statement) is one which is known to be necessarily fallacious, because between his (‘Ali’s) acceptance of Islam and the acceptance of Islam by Zayd, Abu Bakr and Khadijah was only a distance of one day or a period like that. So, how did he perform Salat six months before anyone else?1

So, ‘Ali accepted Islam one whole day before Khadijah, Zayd and Abu Bakr. But then, our dear Shaykh has a surprise package for us:

قول القائل علي أول من صلى مع النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم ممنوع بل أكثر الناس على خلاف ذلك وان أبا بكر
The claim that ‘Ali was the first to perform Salat with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, is impossible. Rather, the majority of the people hold a contrary view, and believe that Abu Bakr perform Salat before him (i.e. ‘Ali).2

One wonders. Since Amir al-Muminin accepted Islam before Abu Bakr, how come the latter offered Salat before him? Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah attempts to solve the puzzle:

The people disagreed about who accepted Islam first. It is said that Abu Bakr was the first to accept Islam, and therefore accepted Islam before ‘Ali. It is (also) said that ‘Ali accepted Islam before him. However, ‘Ali was a child, and the acceptance of Islam by a child, there is disagreement over it (i.e. its validity) among the ‘ulama. Meanwhile, there is no disagreement about the fact that the acceptance of Islam by Abu Bakr was more perfect and more beneficial (than that of ‘Ali).3

He adds:

A child born to two pagan parents is considered a pagan in this world by the consensus of Muslims. If he accepts Islam before maturity, is he considered a Muslim before he reaches maturity? There are two opinions among the ‘ulama, as opposed to the situation of a matured person (who accepts Islam) because he (the matured person) is considered a Muslim by the consensus of Muslims. So, the acceptance of Islam by the three (i.e. Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman) took them out of paganism by the consensus of Muslims. However, the acceptance of Islam by ‘Ali, did it take him out of paganism? There are two well-known opinions. The opinion of (Imam) al-Shafi’i was that the acceptance of Islam by a child does not take him out of paganism.4

Our Shaykh has not explicitly endorsed either of the two opinions. Nonetheless, we will proceed with the assumption that Imam al-Shafi’i was correct.

The first question here is: was ‘Ali really a “child” when he accepted Islam? Imam Ibn ‘Abd al-Barr (d. 463 H) answers:
Abu 'Umar said, “It is said that ‘Ali accepted Islam when he was thirteen years old. It is said that he was twelve years old. It is said that he was fifteen years old. It is said that he was sixteen years old. It is said that he was ten years old. It is said that he was eight years old....

Abu Zayd ‘Umar b. Shaybah mentioned that – Surayj b. al-Nu’man – al-Furat b. al-Saib – Maymun b. Mahran – Ibn ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with them both: “Ali b. Abi Talib accepted Islam while he was THIRTEEN YEARS OLD and died when he was sixty–three years old”. Abu ‘Umar, may Allah be merciful to him, said: “This is the most correct opinion on the matter”.5

Therefore, ‘Ali was thirteen years old when he accepted Islam at the hands of the Messenger of Allah. But, was he a matured person then, or was he still a child? Let us get the testimony of an eye–witness. Imam al–Haythami (d. 807 H) records:

Narrated Abu Rafi’: The first to accept Islam among the male adults was ‘Ali and the first to accept Islam from the female adults was Khadijah.6

Al–Haythami comments:

Al–Bazzar recorded it and its narrators are narrators of the Sahih7

So, Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali was an “adult” when he accepted Islam. Therefore, his Islam was – in terms of quality – as “perfect” as that of Abu Bakr and the other khalifahs. Moreover, ‘Ali accepted Islam about twenty hours or more before Zayd, Abu Bakr and Khadijah, according to the admission of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah. Therefore, he enjoyed precedence in his “perfect” Islam over all others. This is further confirmed by this hadith documented by Imam al–Tabarani (d. 360 H):

“The first of this Ummah to meet its Prophet (on the Day of Resurrection) will be the first of them to accept Islam, ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.”

Shaykh al-Haji comments:

إن إبراهيم والحسن من الرواة عن عبد الرزاق بعد اختلاطه

The chain: Al-Haythami said, “Its narrators are thiqah (trustworthy)”. Hamadi al-Salafi also said: “I say: ‘Ibrahim and al-Hasan are among those narrators who transmitted from ‘Abd al-Razzaq during his confusion.”

In simple words, the narrators are all trustworthy indeed. However, al-Hasan narrated from ‘Abd al-Razzaq after the latter’s memory failure and during the consequent confusion. However, the report of ‘Abd al-Razzaq is corroborated by this report, recorded by Imam Ibn Abi Shaybah (d. 235 H):


“The first of this Ummah to meet its Prophet (on the Day of Resurrection will be the first of them to accept Islam, ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.”

We already know about the trustworthiness of Salamah, Abu Sadiq and ‘Alim al-Kindi. What about Mu’awiyah and Qays? Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) states about Mu’awiyah:

Mu’awiyah b. Hisham al-Qasar, Abu al-Hasan al-Kufi, freed slave of Banu Asad, he is also Mu’awiyah
b. Abi al-‘Abbas: *Saduq (very truthful)*, he had hallucinations.  

Qays is almost like that too, according to al-Hafiz:

Qays b. al-Rabi’ al-Asadi, Abu Muhamamd al-Kufi: *Saduq (very truthful)*. His memory deteriorated when he became old, and his son told him things that were not part of his (original) *ahadith*, and he (Qays) narrated them as *ahadith*.  

Both were very truthful, but with varying memory problems. Nonetheless, their report is a very good *shahid* for the *riwayah* of ‘Abd al-Razzaq. As a result, one can safely conclude that the *athar* of Salman al-Farisi above, narrated by ‘Abd al-Razzaq, is *sahih bi shawahidih*. Therefore, Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib was the first human being, and the first male *adult*, to accept Islam.

Imam al-Tirmidhi (d. 279 H) records a *hadith* that further corroborates this submission:

Muhammad b. Bashar and Muhammad b. al-Muthanna – Muhammad b. Ja’far – Shu’bah b. ‘Amr b. Marrah – Abu Hamza, who was a man from the Ansar – Zayd b. Arqam:

“The first to accept Islam was ‘Ali.”  

Al-Tirmidhi states:

This *hadith* is *hasan sahih*.  

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) agrees:

It has a *sahih* chain.

Imam al-Tabarani (d. 360 H) also documents:

“The first one to accept Islam was ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him.” 16

Shaykh al-Haji comments:

A sahih hadith. Its narrators are trustworthy. 17

Imam Ibn ‘Abd al-Barr caps the references:

Notably, along with Ibn ‘Abbas and Abu Rafi’, those were nine Sahabah. Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H) records about the tenth Sahabi –Sa’d b. Abi Waqqas:

Narrated Qays b. Abi Hazim:

I was in Madinah. While I was moving around in the market, oil stones arrived. So, I saw some people crowding around a Persian man who was riding an animal and cursing ‘Ali b. Abi Talib. People stood round him when Sa’d b. Abi Waqqas turned and stood in front of them and he asked, “What is this?” They replied, “A man cursing ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.” So, Sa’d moved forward and they made way for him until he stood before him and said, “O you! On what basis do you curse ‘Ali b. Abi Talib? Is he not the first to accept Islam? Is he not the first to perform Salat with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him?....” 19
Al-Hakim declares:

هذا حديث صحيح الإسناد

This hadith has a sahih chain.\footnote{20}

Al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) confirms:

على شرط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahih) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim\footnote{21}

With the above, it can be confidently declared that the reports stating that ‘Ali was the first ever to accept Islam are mutawatir, and therefore absolutely true and undisputable. Moreover, that fact is further corroborated by another mutawatir tradition of the Prophet – Hadith al-‘Ilm – narrated by fourteen of the Sahabah!

Additional evidence that Amir al-Muminin had become an “adult” before he recited the shahadah of Islam lies in the fact that the Prophet performed the congregational prayers with him. He would not do that with a child! The report of Sa’d b. Abi Waqqas is already cited above. Meanwhile, there is corroboration in this hadith documented by Imam al-Tirmidhi:

 حدثنا محمد بن حميد حدثنا إبراهيم بن المختار عن شعبة عن أبي بن أمية عن عمرو بن ميمون عن ابن عباس قال:

أول من صلى على


“The first to perform Salat was ‘Ali.”\footnote{22}

‘Allamah al-Albani says:

صحيح

Sahih\footnote{23}

Imam Ahmad b. Hanbal (d. 241 H) records a shahid for the above report:

حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا يزيد بن هارون أنا شعبة عن عمرو بن مرة قال سمعت أبا حمزة يحدث عن زيد بن
Arabic:

أَرْقَمُ قَالَ أَوْلَى مِنْ صَلِّى رِسُولٍ اللَّهِ صَلِي اللَّهُ عَلِيهِ وَسَلَّمَ عَلَيٍّ رَضِيَ اللَّهَ عَنْهَ


“The first to perform Salat with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, was ‘Ali, may Allah the Most High be pleased with him.”

Quite surprisingly, Shaykh al-Arnauṭ states about it:

إِسْنَادُهُ ضَعِيفٌ

Its chain is *dha’if*.

As usual, he has given no reason for the weird verdict. So, let us independently verify the strength of that sanad. Is the above report authentic? Or, is it really weak?

Al-Hafiz says about the first narrator:

أَبُو ﻋَبْدُ ﺍﻟْﺣُرُمَانِ وَﻟَدٌ اﻟْإِمَامِ ﺛَﻘِيَّةٌ


He further states about the second narrator:

أَحْمَدُ ﺑْنُ ﺍﻟْمُحَمَّدِ ﺑْنُ ﺑْنِ ﺍﻟْﺤَنْبُلِ ﺑْنِ ﺍﻟْفَراْحِ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْمُرْوَزِيُّ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْبَغْدَادِ ﺑْنِ ﺍﻟْوَاسِطِ ﺑْنِ ﺍﻟْمُأْمَرِ ﺑْنِ ﻋَبْدِ ﺍﻟْكَٰحِلِ ﻤَوْلاَهُ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْأَرْضِ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْإِمَامِ ﺛَﻘِيَّةٌ


Concerning the third narrator, the verdict is the same, according to al-Hafiz:

يَزِيدُ ﺑْنُ ﺍﻟْهَارُونِ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْزَاذَانِ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْسُّلَامِ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْوَاسِطِ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْأَرْضِ ﺑِنْ ﺍﻟْإِمَامِ ﺛَﻘِيَّةٌ

extremely precise, a great worshipper of Allah.\textsuperscript{28}

The fourth narrator, Shu‘bah, needs no introduction. Al–Hafiz makes some ground-breaking pronouncements about him nonetheless:

\begin{quote}
شعبة بن الحجاج بن الورد العنكي مولاهم أبو بسطام الواسطي ثم البصري نثق حافظ منتق كأن الفوري يقول هو
أمير المؤمنين في الحديث
\end{quote}

Shu‘bah b. al–Hajjaj b. al–Ward al–’Atki, their freed slave, Abu Busäam al–Wasäi, al–Basri: \textit{Thiqah (trustworthy), hafiz (a hadith scientist), extremely precise.} Al–Thawri used to say: “He was the amir al–muminin (the supreme leader) in \textit{al–Hadith}.”\textsuperscript{29}

He has a very simple verdict about the fifth narrator as well:

\begin{quote}
عمرو بن مرة بن عبد الله بن طارق الجملي يفتح الجملي والعمير المرادي أبو عبد الله الكوفي الأعمي نثق عابد كان لا يدلس
\end{quote}


The last narrator is like that too, as pronounced by al–Hafiz:

\begin{quote}
طلحة بن يزيد الأولي يفتح الحمزة وسكون اليا أبو حمزة مولى الأنصار نزل الكوفة وثقه النسائي
\end{quote}

Talhah b. Yazid al–Ayli, the freed slave of the Ansar, he lived in Kufah: \textit{Al–Nasai declared him thiqah (trustworthy).}\textsuperscript{31}

So, all the narrators are \textit{thiqah (trustworthy)}, and there is no evidence of disconnection in the chain. As such, the \textit{isnad} is \textit{sahih} without a doubt! ‘Allamah al–Albani also states about another \textit{hadith} with a very similar \textit{sanad}:

\begin{quote}
أخرجه أبو داود ... من طريق شعبة عن عمرو بن مرة قال: سمعت أبا حمزة أنه سمع زيد بن أرقم قال ... فلقت:
ووهذا سند صحيح رجال الشيخين غير أبي حمزة واسمه طلحة بن يزيد الأنصاري فمن رجال البخاري، ووثقه ابن حبان والنسائي
\end{quote}

Abu Dawud recorded it ... through the route of Shu‘bah – ‘Amr b. Marrah – Abu Hamzah – Zayd b. Arqam.... I (al–Albani) say: \textit{This chain is sahih.} Its narrators are narrators of the two Shaykhs apart from Abu Hamzah, and his name is Talhah b. Yazid al–Ansari and he is from the narrators of al–

In conclusion, the chain of Zayd b. Arqam’s report that ‘Ali was the first human being to perform *Salat* with the Prophet, recorded in *Musnad Ahmad*, is impeccably *sahih*. All the narrators are trustworthy, and there is no disconnection in the chain whatsoever. As such, Shaykh al-Arnaūṭ’s *tadhīf* of the *sanad* has no academic basis.

2. Ibid, vol. 7, p. 273
3. Ibid, vol. 7, p. 155
7. Ibid
15. Ibid
17. Ibid
20. Ibid
23. Ibid
24. Abu ‘ Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muassasat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu‘ayb al-Arnaút], vol. 4, p. 368, # 19303
25. Ibid
27. Ibid, vol. 1, p. 44, # 96
22. Hadith Al–Zuhd, Correcting An Exaggeration

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states about both Abu Bakr and ‘Umar:

أهل العلم بحالهما يقولون ازهد الناس بعد رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم الزهد الشرعي أبو بكر و عمر و ذلك أن
أبا بكر كان له مال يكسبه فائفقه كلمة في سبيل الله

The People of Knowledge, concerning both of them, say that the most ascetic of mankind after the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him – in terms of legitimate ascetism – are Abu Bakr and ‘Umar. This is because Abu Bakr earned some wealth and spent all of it in the Path of Allah.1

He adds:

و قال ابن حزم وقال قالون علي كان أزدهم قال و كتب هذا الجاهل

Ibn Hazm said: “Some people say that ‘Ali was the most ascetic of them”. He (Ibn Hazm) replied, “This ignorant one has lied.”2

So, let us see the faces of some of these “ignorant liars”. Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) records:

فحدثنا يشرح هذا الحديث الشيخ أبو بكر بن إسحاق أبا الحسن بن علي بن زياد السري نا حامد بن يحيى البلخي
يمكننا تسفيان عن إسماعيل بن أبي خالد عن قيس بن أبي حازم قال كنت بالمدينة فزينا أتا أطلوف في السوق إذ
بلغت أحياء الزبيد فرأيت قوما مجتمعين على فارس قد ركب دابة وهو يشتم علي بن أبي طالب والناس وقول
حواليه إذ أقبل سعد بن أبي وقاص فوقف عليهم فقال : ما هذا ؟ فقالوا : رجل يشتم علي بن أبي طالب فتقدم سعد
فأفرجوا له حتى وقف عليه فقال : يا هذا علي ما تشتغل عليه بن أبي طالب ألم يكن أول من أسلم ألم يكن أول من
صلى مع رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم ألم يكن ازهد الناس؟

I was in Madinah. While I was moving around in the market, oil stones arrived. So, I saw some people crowding around a Persian man who was riding an animal and cursing ‘Ali b. Abi Talib. People stood round him when Sa’d b. Abi Waqqas turned and stood in front of them and he asked, “What is this?” They replied, “A man cursing ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.” So, Sa’d moved forward and they made way for him until he stood before him and said, “O you! On what basis do you curse ‘Ali b. Abi Talib? Is he not the first to accept Islam? Is he not the first to perform Salat with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him? Is he not the most ascetic of mankind?”3

Al–Hakim declares:

هذا حديث صحيح الإسناد

This hadith has a sahih chain.4

Al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) confirms:

علي شرط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahih) upon the standard of al–Bukhari and Muslim5

One would never have guessed correctly that the Ahl al–Sunnah consider Sa’d b. Abi Waqqas, radhiyallahu ‘anhu – one of the most senior Sahabah and one of the earliest converts to Islam – to be an ignorant liar! Wait a minute! How come the testimony of Sa’d – an eye–witness – was ignorant fallacy while that of Sunni scholars, born centuries after him, is sound knowledge? Has the world really turned upside down?

Interestingly, another big Sunni name features prominently on the list of “ignorant liars”. Al–Hafiz Ibn Kathir (d. 774 H) copies this report:


They mentioned ascetism in the presence of ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al–‘Aziz. Some people said, “So–and–so (is the most ascetic)”. Others said, “So–and–so (is the most ascetic)”. So, ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al–‘Aziz said, “The most ascetic of mankind – as far as this world (i.e. material possessions, power, and worldly pleasures) is concerned – is ‘Ali b. Abi Talib.”6
Al-Hafiz says about the first narrator:


Yahya b. Ma'in b. 'Awn al-Ghaṭfani, their freed slave, Abu Zakariyah al-Baghdadi: *Thiqah* (trustworthy), a well-known *hafiz* (hadith scientist), Imam of *al-jarh wa al-ta’dil*.7

Concerning the second narrator, he also states:


‘Ali b. al–Ja‘d b. ‘Ubayd, Abu al–Hasan al–Jawhari al–Baghdadi: *Thiqah* (trustworthy), *thabt* (accurate), he was accused of Shi‘ism.8

Lastly, he has this verdict on the third narrator:


Al–Hasan b. Salih b. Salih b. Hayy, and he was Hayyan b. Shufay al–Hamdani al–Thawri: *Thiqah* (trustworthy), a jurist, a great worshipper of Allah, he was accused of Shi‘ism.9

The *sanad*, therefore, is *sahih*. All the narrators are trustworthy, and there is no disconnection among the narrators. So, ‘Umar b. ‘Abd al–‘Aziz – the righteous *khalifah* in the sight of most of the Ahl al–Sunnah – was actually an “ignorant liar” according to the view of Imam Ibn Hazm, endorsed by Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah!

It is fair, at this point, to compare the asceticism of either Abu Bakr or ‘Umar with that of ‘Ali, *‘alaihi al-salam*, for further verification. We prefer ‘Umar for the research, since more materials are available on his lifetime and death than on his predecessor. Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah claims that ‘Umar was more ascetic than ‘Ali. Let us test the submission against reality. We open the investigation with this athar from *Sahih al-Bukhari*:

 حدثنا محمد بن سلام أخبرنا مخلد بن يزيد أخبرنا ابن جريج قال أخبرني عطاء عن عبيد الله بن عمر: أن أبا موسي الأشعري استأذن على عمر بن الخطاب رضي الله عنه فلم يؤمن له وكانه كان مشغولا فرجع أبو موسي ففرغ عمر فقال: ألم أسمع صوت عبد الله بن قيس اثنين له ؟ قبل قد رفع فدؤه فقال كما تأثني على ذلك بالبيئة فاطلق إلى مجلس الأنصار فسألهم فقالوا لا يشهد علي هذا إلا أصغرا أبو سعيد الخدري فنهب بأبي سعيد الخدري فقال عمر أخفى هذا علي من أمر رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم؟ أهلاني الصفق بالأسواق. يعني
Abu Musa al-Ash’ari sought permission of ‘Umar b. al-Khattaab, may Allah be pleased with him, to enter his house. But, he (‘Umar) did not give him permission. It was as though he (‘Umar) was busy. So Abu Musa went back. When ‘Umar finished his job, he asked, “Didn’t I hear the voice of ‘Abd Allah b. Qays (i.e. the real name of Abu Musa)? Allow him to come in.” It was said, “He (Abu Musa) has returned.” So, he (‘Umar) sent for him and (on his arrival), he (Abu Musa) said, “We were ordered to do so”. ‘Umar told him, “Bring witness in proof of that.” Abu Musa went to the assembly of the Ansar and asked them. They said, “None amongst us will testify to that except the youngest of us, Abu Sa’id Al-Khudri.” Abu Musa then took Abu Sa’id Al-Khudri (to ‘Umar) and ‘Umar said “Has this order of the Messenger of Allah been hidden from me? I used to be busy trading in markets.”

Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records another report with some more details:

I was sitting in Madinah in the assembly of the Ansar when Abu Musa came to us trembling with fear. We said, “What is the problem with you?” He replied, “‘Umar sent for me. So, I went to his door, and said as-salam ‘alaikum three times and he did not reply me. Therefore, I returned. On that, he said, ‘Why did you not come to us?’ I said, ‘I came to you and said as-salam ‘alaikum three times at your door but I was not given any response. So, I returned. The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, had said, ‘When any of you seeks permission to enter three times, and he is not permitted, he must turn back’”. So, ‘Umar said, “Bring evidence to support it. Otherwise, I will take you to task.” Ubayy b. Ka’b said, “None shall stand with him (to testify) but the youngest of the people.” Abu Sa’id said, “I am the youngest”. He (Ubayy) said, “Then go with him.”

‘Umar literally heard him saying as-salamu ‘alaikum three times, but did not respond. In line with the Sunnah, Abu Musa returned. Strangely, ‘Umar proceeded to accuse him of NOT having come to his door at all despite his message! That certainly was a deliberately false accusation from the khalifah of the believers! In any case, Abu Musa explained himself, and excused his action through the Sunnah of
Quite weirdly, ‘Umar had absolutely no clue about this Sunnah! From the narrations, it is clear that all the Ansar knew of the Prophetic order. In what looks like a humiliation of the khalifah, they randomly picked the youngest of them, to narrate it to him. But, what was ‘Umar’s excuse? He used “to be busy trading in markets”. ‘Umar was moving from market to market doing business in order to make money. Therefore, he did not have time to learn the Sunnah from the Messenger! As such, he was clueless about even some of the most basic Sunnahs.

Apparently, money had more priority over the Sunnah in the sight of ‘Umar. What about ‘Ali? Al-Hafiz Ibn Kathir states:

Shu’bah b. al-Hajjaj, from Simak, from Khalid b. ‘Ar’arah that he heard ‘Ali; and Shu’bah again narrated from al-Qasim b. Abi Barrah from Abu al-Tufayl that he heard ‘Ali; and IT IS ALSO AUTHENTICALLY TRANSMITTED through many chains that Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib climbed the pulpit of Kufah and said, “You will not ask me about ANY verse in the Book of Allah, or about ANY Sunnah from the Messenger of Allah, except that I will inform you about that.”

‘Ali knew all the Sunnahs, without absolutely any exception. The only way he was able to achieve this was that he placed the supreme priority upon learning the Qur’an and Sunnah from the Messenger of Allah. In all honesty, it is extremely difficult, if not entirely impossible, to rationalize how our Ahl al-Sunnah brothers reach their conclusion that ‘Umar was more ascetic or more knowledgeable than ‘Ali!

As a final point, let us compare both ‘Umar and ‘Ali from another angle. Imam Ibn Shabah (d. 262 H) records:

I said to Nafi’, “Did ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with him, have any debt?” So, he replied, “From where can ‘Umar claim to have any debt when a man from his inheritors sold his inheritance for 100,000 (dinars)?”

Al-Hafiz has this to say about the report:
'Umar b. Shabah recorded in Kitab al-Madinah with a sahih chain that Nafi’ said, “From where can 'Umar claim to have any debt when a man from his inheritors sold his inheritance for 100,000 (dinars)?”. This does not negate the possibility that when he died he had a debt. The person can be very rich person. But, that does not necessarily mean that he does not have any debt. Perhaps, Nafi’ was denying the existence of any unpaid debt for him.14

The dinar was the default Arabian currency at that time. It was a gold coin. In modern terms, each classical dinar equals approximately US $193.0015 (one hundred and ninety-three US dollars). So, each male son of 'Umar inherited from him net wealth worth at least US $19,300,000 (nineteen million and three hundred thousand US dollars). If he had any daughters, her inheritance would be half of that, which is US $9,650,000 (nine million and six hundred and fifty thousand US dollars). So, how many were 'Umar’s children who survived him? Al-Hafiz Ibn Kathir states about 'Umar b. al-Khattab:

I (Ibn Kathir) say: In summary, his (i.e. ‘Umar’s) children, may Allah be pleased with him, were thirteen, and they were Zayd al-Akbar, Zayd al-Asghar, ‘Asim, ‘Abd Allah, ‘Abd al-Rahman al-Akbar, ‘Abd al-Rahman al-Awsaṭ – al-Zubayr b. Bakar said he was Abu Shahmah, ‘Abd al-Rahman al-Asghar, ‘Ubayd Allah, ‘Iyad, Hafsah, Ruqayyah, Zaynab and Fa‘īmah, may Allah be pleased with them.16

The second khalifah had thirteen children. Only four of them were females. So, there were nine males. Of his children generally, one of them – Abu Shahmah – died during his lifetime. Ibn ‘Abd al-Barr (d. 463 H) explains the circumstances of his death:

‘Abd al-Rahman b. ‘Umar al-Awsaṭ was Abu Shahmah. He was the one who was beaten in Egypt by ‘Amr b. al-As for alcohol drinking. Then, he took him to Madinah, and his father (i.e. ‘Umar) beat him as a parental correctional measure. Then he became sick and died after a month.17

It looks like unintentional manslaughter by the angry khalifah. Whatever the case, eight males and four
females inherited ‘Umar among his children alone. We will completely ignore what his wives and some other people might also have inherited from the second khalifah. We will also not take into account any gifts from his vast wealth which he might have given to some people. We will equally take our eyes away from any debts he had, which was re-paid from his estate, before the remainder was distributed among his inheritors. Our focus, strictly, is upon what passed to his sons and daughters from him.

The monetary value of the inheritance of a male inheritor was US $19,300,000 (nineteen million and three hundred thousand US dollars). For all eight sons, the total would be US $154,400,000 (one hundred and fifty four million and four hundred thousand dollars). The share of each daughter was US $9,650,000 (nine million and six hundred and fifty thousand US dollars). For the four daughters, their total inheritance was worth US $38,600,000 (thirty-eight million and six hundred thousand US dollars). Adding US $154,400,000 to $38,600,000, we get US $193,000,000 (one hundred and ninety-three million US dollars). This was the wealth that the children of ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab alone inherited from him.

How ‘Umar acquired such vast wealth is unclear. Before he became the khalifah, he was only an average businessman, with no record of any spectacular success. Moreover, he was not an oil tycoon or weapons merchant, nor was he a Silicon Valley entrepreneur. Even his entire business empire, in modern terms, would be only a small-scale rural enterprise. Considering the extreme poverty levels back then, ‘Umar’s fortune of at least US $193,000,000 (one hundred and ninety-three million US dollars) placed him in the position of multibillionaires in our times. He was most likely the richest man on earth during his khilafah.

So, what about Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali? Was he really worldlier than ‘Umar, as claimed by Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah? Imam Ahmad b. Hanbal (d. 241 H) records:


Verily, a man has left you yesterday. The awwalun (people of old) never surpassed him in knowledge, and the akhirun (later ones) never reach his level (in knowledge). Whoever the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, appointed him and gave him the flag, he never returned until he is granted victory (by Allah). He left behind no gold coin and no silver coin except 700 (seven hundred) dirhams from his salary. He set it aside to procure with it a servant for his family.”

---

18
A dirham which was a silver coin, in modern terms, equals approximately US $3 (three US dollars). So, ‘Ali’s monetary wealth when he died was only US $2100 (two thousand and one hundred US dollars). Apart from his living quarters and his battle equipment (and possibly a few other minor items), there is no reliable record of him possessing and leaving behind anything else. Rather, the fact that he had to set aside seven hundred dirhams from his salary in order to purchase a servant shows that he had no other means. Perhaps, his entire estate was only US $5,000 (five thousand US dollars) at the most. To our dear Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah, a *khalifah* with a total estate of less than US $5,000 (five thousand US dollars) was more worldly and materialistic than another *khalifah* who left behind more than US $193,000.000 (one hundred and ninety-three million US dollars). Isn’t that very weird?
23. Verse Of Al-Najwa, A Real Eye-Opener

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

و الجواب أن يقال أما الذي لبت فهو أن عليها رضي الله عنه تصدق و ناجي لم تسخت الآية قبل أن يعمل بها غيره
لكن الآية لم توجب الصدقة عليهم لكن أمرهم إذا ناجوا أن يتصدقوا فمن لم نتجاه لم يكن عليه أن يتصدق و إذا لم
تكن المنهاجة واجبة لم يكن أحد ملما إذا ترك ما ليس بواجب

The reply is to say that what is authentically transmitted is that ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, gave charity and had a private conversation (with the Prophet). Then the verse was abrogated before anyone else could act upon it.

However, the verse did not make the giving of charity compulsory upon them (i.e. the Sahabah). Rather, it ordered them to give charity whenever they had private conversation (with the Messenger). Therefore, whosoever did not have a private conversation (with the Prophet) did not have to give charity. Since having a private conversation (with the Messenger) was not compulsory, none could be criticized for abandoning what was not obligatory.1

He adds elsewhere:

وهكذا أبي النجوى فإنه لم ينال الرسول قبل نسخها إلا علي ولم يكن على من ترك النجوى حرج فمثل هذا العمل ليس
من خصائص الأئمة ولا من خصائص علي رضي الله عنه ولا يقال إن غير علي ترك النجوى بخلا بالصدقة لأن هذا
غير معلوم فإن المدة لم تطل وفي تلك المدة القصيرة قد لا يحتاج الواحد إلى النجوى وإن فذر أن هذا كان يخص
بعض الناس لم يلزم أن يكون أبو بكر و عمر رضي الله عنهما من هؤلاء كيف وأبو بكر رضي الله عنه قد نفق مائه
كله يوم رغب النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم في الصدقة و عمر رضي الله عنه جاء ينصف مائه بلا حاجة إلى النجوى
فكيف يدخل أحدهما بدرهمين أو ثلاثة يقدمها بين يدي نجواه

The Verse of al-Najwa is like that too. This is because none had a private conversation with the Messenger before its abrogation except ‘Ali, and there was no blame on anyone who abandoned having a private conversation (with the Prophet). The like of this act (of ‘Ali) is not part of the exclusive merits of the Imams, and was not from the exclusive merits of ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him. It is also not said that others apart from ‘Ali abandoned the private conversation out of miserliness to avoid giving charity. This is because such (a reason) is not known, for the time was short.
During that short period, it was possible that one did not need to have the private conversation (with the Messenger). If some people were able to do this, it was not necessary that Abu Bakr and ‘Umar, may Allah be pleased with them both, were among such people. How can that be when it was Abu Bakr, may Allah be pleased with him, who had spent all his wealth on the day that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, encouraged the giving of charity.

‘Umar too, may Allah be pleased with him, gave half of his wealth (in charity), without the need for a private conversation. How could either of them have been miserly about spending two or three dirhams before his private conversation (with the Prophet)?

Our dear Shaykh confirms the authenticity of the narration stating that Amir al-Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam, was the only one who ever complied with the Verse of al-Najwa before its abrogation. However, he has made excuses for the failures of Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman to fulfill the instruction in the verse, despite Sunni claims about their unmatched generosity and selflessness. According to the Shaykh, the verse was shortlived. When it was revealed, Amir al-Muminin enforced it. But, before anyone else could have a reason or chance to do likewise, it was cancelled. So, others did not have the opportunity. Besides, it was not obligatory upon Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman to comply with the verse anyway unless they intended to have private discussions with the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi. Since they might not have intended to privately talk with the Prophet, none can blame them for not having complied with the verse before its abrogation.

In order to understand what happened with the Verse of al-Najwa, it is important to understand a background fact about the Sahabah, as stated by Allah:

O you who believe! Obey Allah, and obey the Messenger and render not vain your deeds. Verily, those who disbelieve, and hinder from the Path of Allah, then die while they are disbelievers, Allah will not forgive them. So be not weak and ask not for peace while you are having the upper hand. Allah is with you, and will never decrease the reward of your good deeds. The life of this world is but play and pastime, but if you believe, and fear Allah, and avoid evil, He will grant you your wages, and will not ask you your wealth.

If He were to ask you of it (i.e. your wealth), and press you, YOU WOULD BE MISERLY, and He will bring out all your ill-wills. Behold! You are those who are called upon to spend in the Path of Allah, YET AMONG YOU ARE SOME WHO ARE MISERS. And whoever is miserly, he is only miserly to himself.
A lot of the wealthy Sahabah were misers and ill-willing. This was why Allah generalized about them in the first statement. Even if we were to reject the sweeping declaration of our Creator, we must still, at the least, accept that among the wealthy Sahabah were many who were misers. It was against this background that Allah sent down the Verse of al-Najwa:

O you who believe! When you consult with the Messenger in private, spend something in charity before your private consultation. That will be better and purer for you. But, if you find not (the means for it), then verily, Allah is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful. 4

There are two factors for consideration in the blessed verse. Firstly, it covered only those of the Sahabah who used to have private consultations with the Messenger of Allah. Without any doubt, those were primarily the people of Madinah and Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman were chiefs among them. Secondly, the command, apparently, was directed to those of the Sahabah in Madinah who had the means to spend in charity. Some of them were so destitute that they could not afford to give out anything. Allah exempted such extremely poor Sahabah. There is again absolutely no doubt that Abu Bakr ‘Umar and ‘Uthman were able to afford sadaqah from their wealth.

Interestingly, once the Verse of al-Najwa was revealed, the wealthy and middle-income Sahabah displayed disturbing levels of miserliness. They were required to give only 1 dirham – approximately US $3 (three US dollars) – or above in charity. But, they all – with only one exception – refrained from giving anything! They instead withheld entirely from privately consulting with the Prophet in order to escape spending anything in sadaqah!

This was why it was only Amir al-Muminin who enforced the verse. Others deliberately declined. They had reasons and needs, as well as very ample opportunities, to privately speak with the Messenger. However, they chose to forgo doing so, just to keep their little dirhams and dinars in their pockets. The wealthy and middle-income Sahabah had great chances to fulfil the commandment in the verse. But, all of them recoiled, except Amir al-Muminin ‘Ali!

Due to the unbecoming attitude of the Sahabah to the command in the Verse of al-Najwa, Allah cancelled it:

Are you AFRAID of spending in charity before your private consultation? If then, do not do it, and
Allah has FORGIVEN you. So, perform Salat and give Zakat and obey Allah and and His Messenger. And Allah is All–Aware of what you do.\(^5\)

They were literally “afraid” to spend just 1 dirham (US $3) from their wealth, while many of them had several thousands! Looking at the text of the verse, it is general. Therefore, it applied universally to all the wealthy and middle–income Sahabah living in Madinah, except whosoever was exonerated by strong evidence. All of them had needs to privately consult with the Messenger of Allah. But, they stayed back, “afraid” of giving sadaqah! The only one exempted from the criticism, of course, was ‘Ali b. Abi Talib – due to the existence of authentic reports clearing him of any guilt. Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) records one of them:


“Verily, in the Book of Allah, there is a verse that none complied with, and none will ever comply with, apart from me. It is the Verse of al–Najwa \{O you who believe! When you consult with the Messenger in private, spend something in charity before your private consultation\} \(^6\)

Al–Hakim comments:

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.\(^7\)

Al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) agrees:

(Sahih) upon the standard of al–Bukhari and Muslim\(^8\)

There is no evidence whatsoever removing the names of Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman from the black list. As such, none can take them out of it. In other words, Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman too were among the miserly ones! Allah also considered their omission to have been a sin, but had “forgiven” them on His Own Accord. Apparently, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s re–invention of the incident does not tally at all with the reality.
One then wonders. Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman were literally “afraid” to spend a single dirham of their wealth in *sadaqah*. That was their attitude to money and charity. This fact, which has Qur’anic backing, nullifies and throws out all Sunni claims and *riwayat* about the trio’s legendary financial sacrifices in the Path of Allah. If the tales were true, the story of the *Verse of al–Najwa* would have been far different. Wait a minute! ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab stashed up for himself wealth worth more than US $193,000,000 (one hundred and ninety-three million US dollars) during his *khilafah*. That was about 1400 years ago when poverty levels, across the world, were beyond extreme. If he had wanted to be miserly, what else would he have done?

It would not be out of place to end this chapter with these golden Words of Allah:

> وَالذِّين يَكْنِزُونَ الْدُّهْرَ وَالْفَضْلَةَ وَلا يَنْفَقُونَهَا فِي سَبِيلِ اللّهِ فَيُبَدِّلُهُمْ فِيهِمْ عَذَابَ أَلْلَهِ ﻓِي يَوْمِ يُحْصِنُونَ اﻟﺬُّﻫِبَ وَاﻟْفَضْلَةَ ﻛُبْراً ﻓَيُدْعِرُونَ ﻛُبْراً ﻓِي حَيَاتِهِمْ ﻓِي الْإِخْرَاجِ ﻛُبْراً ﻓَيُدْعِرُونَ

The righteous will be told: “This is what you hoarded for yourselves. Now taste of what you used to hoard.”

24. Hadith Al–Rayat, A Truly Messy One

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

> وقال الرافضي والرابع أنه كان أشجع الناس....
The Rafidhi said: “The fourth (point) is that he (‘Ali) was the bravest of mankind....

The reply is that there is no doubt that ‘Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, was one of the brave ones among the Sahabah ... As for his statement that he (‘Ali) was the bravest of mankind, that is a lie. Rather, the bravest of mankind was the Messenger of Allah. 

Our dear Shaykh has removed the words of the Shi‘i scholar from its proper context. The style of expression adopted by the latter was very common in Arabic texts, and the word “mankind” in it always excluded the Prophet, salallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi! In other words, when the Shi‘i scholar mentioned “the bravest of mankind”, the phrase “after the Messenger of Allah” is automatically implied. Similar expressions can be found in these words of Sa‘d b. Abi Waqqas, a very senior Sahabi, as documented by Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H):

“O you! On what basis do you curse ‘Ali b. Abi Talib? Is he not the first to accept Islam? Is he not the first to perform Salat with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him? Is he not the most ascetic of mankind? Is he not the most knowledgeable of mankind?”

Al–Hakim declares:

This hadith has a sahih chain.

Al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) confirms:

Will our dear Shaykh accuse this noble Sahabi of telling lies? Anyway, the Shaykh himself makes absolutely no attempt to claim Abu Bakr or ‘Umar was braver than Amir al–Muminin, ‘alaihi al–salam, in physical battle. Rather, he re–defines the word “bravery”, and then plays a new card:
And “bravery” is explained with two things. **One of them is strength of the heart, and its firmness in the face of fear.** The second is great strength in physical fighting, to kill a lot of people. **Only the first is bravery.** As for the second, it (only) proves physical strength. And, not everyone who is physically strong has a strong heart, and not vice versa.5

So, “bravery” is only to have a fearless heart. Whether this translates into action on the battlefield or not is irrelevant. Rather, the warrior who firmly faces multiple enemy fighters in battle, and kills them is not brave at all. He is only “physically strong”. Our Shaykh justifies his new definition in this manner:

The Prophet, peace be upon him, was the most perfect of mankind in this type of bravery (i.e. of the heart) which was what was expected in the war commanders. He never killed anyone with his hand except Ubayy b. Khalaf. He killed him on the Day of Uhud, and never killed anyone else before or after them. Yet, he was braver than all the Sahabah.6

This analogy does not work in the cases of Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman though. The Messenger of Allah was the ruler of Arabia at that time. Heads of state are not expected anywhere to participate in battle like foot soldiers. Rather, they are to be shielded from the enemy as much as possible. As for Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman, they were ordinary soldiers. Therefore, they had every obligation and chance to participate in multiple combats with enemy fighters. But what happened?

Obviously, since Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s new definition is hinged upon the roles of the Prophet in battle, it is inapplicable in the cases of anyone who was not the head of state at the times of the battles. Moreover, one honestly wonders about the logicality of the Shaykh’s separation of fearlessness of the heart from battle valour. Can a person with a timid heart willfully confront fully armed, firmly determined, well-trained and highly experienced enemy fighters, in mortal combats, in battle?

But then, what exactly does Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah want us to pick from his incongruous definition? He minces no words about it:
Since the type of bravery that is required from the rulers is the bravery of the heart, then there is no doubt that Abu Bakr was braver than ‘Umar, and ‘Umar was braver than ‘Uthman and ‘Ali.  

Strange indeed! Were Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman rulers during the lifetime of the Prophet?! In any case, there is an implicit admission in these wild gymnastics of our dear Shaykh that the trio were no match at all for Amir al-Muminin in terms of physical strength and battle successes. However, he must nonetheless place them above him at any cost. Therefore, he lumps things up and tables patently desperate excuses. He also apparently assumes – contrary to logic – that the heroic achievements of ‘Ali in battle required less courage than the trio’s relative battle redundancy!

Then comes the big question, and Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah makes another attempt:

As for his (i.e. the Shi‘i scholar’s) statement that he (‘Ali) NEVER fled (the battlefield), then he was, in this (merit), like Abu Bakr, ‘Umar, Talhah, al-Zubayr and others among the Sahabah, may Allah be pleased with them. The statement that he (‘Ali) never fled away is like the statement that these people too never fled away. It is not known that any of them ever fled away. And if something had happened (from them) in secret which has not been reported, it is possible that something happened from ‘Ali too which has not been reported.

The Muslims fled away the battlefield twice – on the Day of Uhud and on the Day of Hunayn and it is not reported that anyone of these people fled away. What is mentioned in the Sirah (i.e. biography of the Prophet) and al-Maghazi (i.e. reports of battles) books is that Abu Bakr and ‘Umar stood firmly with the Prophet, peace be upon him, on the Day of Uhud and on the Day of Hunayn and did not flee away with those who fled away.

Whoever reported that they both fled away on the Day of Hunayn, his lie is obvious. The only one (of them) who fled away on the Day of Uhud was ‘Uthman, and Allah has forgiven him. As for what is reported concerning the flight of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar with the flag on the Day of Hunayn, it is one of the fabrications which the forgers forged.

The Shaykh agrees that Amir al-Muminin never fled the battlefield, no matter how hopeless things became. This is very crucial in determining who was brave and who was cowardly. There is no doubt that anyone who flees the battlefield is a coward. Interestingly, our Shaykh confesses that ‘Uthman was
a coward who fled away on the Day of Uhud. No wonder, he never attempts anywhere to claim that ‘Uthman was braver than ‘Ali. But then, he argues that Abu Bakr and ‘Umar too, like ‘Ali, never fled away. Apparently, if he ever admits that either of the duo was a coward who fled away, his entire argument crashes. One fact, however, remains undeniable. There are reports indicating that both Abu Bakr and ‘Umar fled the battlefields. Our Shaykh instinctively throws them out as fabrications. He also seeks to counter such reports with what is “mentioned” – with no proof of authenticity – in the history books. A fair researcher, of course, would like to examine these “forged” reports alleging Abu Bakr’s and ‘Umar’s cowardice, to determine the truth of the matter by himself.

Well, according to an authentic report, Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman fled the battlefields repeatedly on different occasions. It did not happen once, twice or thrice. Rather, on several occasions of battle, the trio fled away, as documented by Imam Muslim (d. 261 H):

```
حدثنا محمد بن أبي بكر المقدسي وحادج بن عمر البقراوي ومحمد بن عبد الأعلى قالوا حدثنا المتعمت (وهو ابن سليمان) قال سمعت أبي عن أبي عثمان قال لم يبق مع رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم في بعض تلك الأيام التي قال فيها رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم غير طلحة وسلم عن حديثهما
```


“None remained with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, on some of the DAYS in which the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, was fighting apart from Talhah and Sa’d. They both (i.e. Talhah and Sa’d) narrated that to me.”

On the days of the successive battles, everyone else used to flee – apparently including Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman – except Talhah and Sa’d.

Among such days, the Day of Uhud (3 AH) readily comes to mind. The most notorious runner on that day was ‘Uthman. Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah himself admits this. Nonetheless, this is an explicit hadith from Sahih al-Bukhari confirming his flight:

```
حدثنا موسى بن إسماعيل حدثنا أبو عوانة حدثنا عثمان هو ابن موهب قال جاء رجل من أهل مصر وحج البيت فرأى قوما جلوسا فقال من هؤلاء القوم؟ فقالوا هؤلاء قريش قال فم من الشيخ فيها أم هل؟ فقالوا عبد الله بن عمر قال يا ابن عمر إني سألك عن شيء فحدثني هل تعلم أن عثمان ف يوم أحد قال نعم
```

Musa b. Isma’il – Abu ‘Awanah – ‘Uthman b. Muhib:

An Egyptian man came and performed the Hajj to the House. So, he saw some people sitting, and asked, “Who are these people?” They said, “They are the tribe of Quraysh.” He said, “Who is the old man amongst them?” They replied, “He is ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Umar.” He said, “O Ibn Umar! I want to ask you
about something; please tell me about it. **Do you know that ‘Uthman fled away on the Day of Uhud?’**

Ibn ‘Umar said, "Yes."  

Referring to this ugly incident, Allah states:

> إِذَا تَصَدَّوْنَ وَلَا تَتَلَوُّنَّ عَلَى أَحَدٍ وَالرَّسُولُ يَدْعُوُكُمْ فَأَثَابَكُمْ غَمًَّا يُبِيمُكُمْ فَإِذَا تَحَزَّنُوا عَلَى ما فَاتَكُمْ وَلَا أَصَابُكُمْ وَاللَّهُ خَبِيرٌ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ

(And remember) when you ran away (dreadfully) without even casting a side glance at anyone, and the Messenger was in your rear calling you back.  

The Prophet was calling ‘Uthman while he was fleeing away. He heard him, but did not even cast a side glance at anyone, not even at Muhammad! He was completely frightened, and sought to run away from the Messenger of Allah as quickly as they could, in order to save his own life. It was indeed a great flight, and a great tragedy!

On the Day of Hunayn (8 AH) too, the Sahabah fled away again! This is referred to by Allah in His Book:

> لَنْ تَنْصَرَكُمُ اللَّهُ فِي مَوَافِتٍ كَثِيرَةٍ وَيَوْمَ هَـٰنِينَ إِذَا أَعْجَبَتْهُ ﻟَمْ يَنْصَرُكُمْ إِلَّا ﻟَمْ يَنْصَرِ ﺑَنِي إِسْرَائِيلَ وَمَعَ ﻟَهُ ﺑِنَاءٍ ﻓَفَوَتَهُمْ ﻟَمْ يَنْصَرِ ﺑَنِي إِسْرَائِيلَ

Truly, Allah has helped you on many battlefields, **and on the Day of Hunayn** when you rejoiced at your great number but it availed you naught and the earth, as vast as it is, was straitened for you. **Then you fled away.**

The statement is general. Therefore, everyone fled except whoever there is concrete evidence clearing him. ‘Umar, in particular, was one of the runners on that day. Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) records:

> وقال الليث حدثني يحيى بن سعيد عن عمر بن كثير بن أفقل عن أبي محمد مولى أبي قتادة أن أبي قتادة قال لما كان حنين نظرت إلى رجل من المسلمين يقاتل رجلا من المشركين وأخرى من المشركين يختلها من ورائه يقاتله فأسرعت إلى الذي يختلها فرفع يده ليضربني وأضر بده فقطعتها ثم أخذني فضمني ضما شددا حتى تخوفت ثم ترك فتحل ودفعته ثم قتلته وانهزم المسلمون وانهزمت معهم فإذا بعمر بن الخطاب في الناس فقتلته له ما شأ الناس قال لى أن الله لم تراجع الناس إلى رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم


On the Day of Hunayn, I saw a Muslim fighting with one of the pagans and another pagan was hiding himself behind the Muslim in order to kill him. So I hurried towards the pagan who was hiding behind the
Muslim to kill him, and he raised his hand to hit me but I hit his hand and cut it off.

That man got hold of me and pressed me so hard that I was afraid, then I knelt down and his grip became loose and I pushed him and killed him. **The Muslims fled, and I too fled WITH THEM.**


Abu Qatadah referred to those Sahabah who fled away as “the people”. They fled but later returned to the Messenger at the battlefield. The interesting part is that while Abu Qatadah himself was fleeing away “with them”, he met ‘Umar “amongst the people”! In other words, ‘Umar too was fleeing away with the people! He was “amongst” the people speeding off the battle ground. If the second khalifah had stayed with the Messenger of Allah, Abu Qatadah – who had run away from the Prophet – would never had met ‘Umar “amongst the people”!

A rather unfortunate turn was ‘Umar’s attempted justification of the Sahabah’s run from the battlefield. He claimed that those Sahabah – including himself – were obeying “the command” of Allah. We searched the Qur’an and **ahadith** to locate this “command”. But, we came up with nothing like it. Rather, this is what we read:

O you who believe! When you meet those who disbelieve, in a battlefield, **never flee from them.** And whoever flees away on such a day – unless it be a stratagem of war, or to retreat to a troop, – he indeed has drawn upon himself Wrath from Allah. **And his abode is Hellfire,** and worse indeed is that destination! 14

Does it really look like the Sahabah were obeying Allah with their great flight? We do not think so.

---

1. Abu al-‘Abbas Ahmad b. ‘Abd al-Halim b. Taymiyyah al-Harrani, Minhaj al-Sunnah al-Nabawiyyah (Muasassat Qurtubah; 1st edition, 1406 H) [annotator: Dr. Muhammad Rashad Salim], vol. 8, pp. 75-76
3. Ibid
4. Ibid
5. Abu al-‘Abbas Ahmad b. ‘Abd al-Halim b. Taymiyyah al-Harrani, Minhaj al-Sunnah al-Nabawiyyah (Muasassat Qurtubah; 1st edition, 1406 H) [annotator: Dr. Muhammad Rashad Salim], vol. 8, p. 77
6. Ibid, vol. 8, p. 78
7. Ibid, vol. 8, p. 79
8. Ibid, vol. 8, p. 91
9. Abu al-Husayn Muslim b. al-Hajjaj al-Qushayri al-Naysaburi, Sahih Muslim (Beirut: Dar Ihya al-Turath al-‘Arabi) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad ‘Abd al-Baqi], vol. 4, p. 1879, # 2414 (47)
25. Hadith Al-Rayat, Investigating Its Authenticity

Before Hunayn (8 AH), ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab ran away from the battlefield at least twice – during Khandaq (5 AH) and at Khaybar (7 AH). It was at Khaybar that Hadith Al-Rayat was declared by the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa ahlīhi. We will therefore briefly examine what the second khalīfah did during the Khandaq battle before moving on to Khaybar. Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) records:

 حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا يزيد قال أنا محمد بن عمرو عن أبيه عن جده عائشة رضي الله عنها فأنفقت قال الناس فعند الأشداء لو أن الأمير فيناء أحسن من السجود قالته فقلت إذا أنا يسعد بن معاذ ومعه بن أخي الحارث بن أسس يحمل مجندة قالت جلسنا إلى الأرض فمر سعد وعليه درع من حديد قد خرجت منها أطرافه فأنا أعترف على أطرافه سعد وقال وكان سعد من أعظم الناس وأطولهم قالت سعد وهو يرتجل ويقول (ليت قلبي يدرك الهيجا جمل) ما أحسن الموت إذا حان الأجل) قالت فقتمت فاقتتحمت حديقة فإذا فيها نفر من المسلمين وإذا فيهم عمر بن الخطاب وفيهم رجل عليه سيفه حتى معفرأ ففال عمر ما جاء يك عمري والله إنه لجريئة وما يؤمنك أن يكون يلده أو يكون تحوز قالت فما زال يلومي حتى تمنيت أن الأرض انشقت لسأعتن إذا فدخلت فيها قالت فرفع الرجل السيف عن وجهه فإذا أطلحة بن عبد الله ففأ يعذب يا عمر يا أبا الكمال قلت أكثر من اليوم وأين التحوز أو الفرار إلا إلى الله عز وجل


I went out on the Day of al-Khandaq and I stood behind the people. So, I heard footsteps coming from behind me. I turned around and saw Sa’d b. Mu‘adh, and his nephew al-Harith b. Aws was carrying his armour. Therefore, I sat down on the ground and Sa’d passed by, wearing an iron armour from which his limbs had come out. I was afraid of Sa’d’s limbs. Sa’d was one of the most huge and tallest people. Sa’d passed by, singing a battle song, saying: “Very soon the battle will meet a camel ... What a good death it is when the time has come.”

Then I stood up and entered a garden. There was a small group of Muslims there, and ‘Umar b.
al-Khaṭṭab was amongst them and there was another man who was wearing a mask. ‘Umar said: “What brought you here? I swear by my life and I swear by Allah, you are a reckless woman! What assures you against the occurrence of a disaster or capture?” He kept blaming me so much until I wished that the earth would split open for me so that I could enter into it. Then the (masked) man removed the mask from his face, and he was Talhah b. ‘Ubayd Allah. So he said, “Woe to you, O Umar! You have said too much today! And where is the writhing movement or the flight except to Allah the Almighty?”

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) has copied the exact same narration in his Sahihah, and states:

أخرجه الإمام أحمد (6 / 141 – 142) عن محمد بن عمرو عن أبيه عن علقة ابن وقاص، قال: أخبرتي عائشة فقلت: وقعت نسائدها حسن.

I (Al-Albani) say: This chain is hasan. Al-Haythami said in Majma’ al-Zawaid (6/128): “Ahmad recorded it and in the chain is Muhammad b. ‘Amr b. ‘Alqamah, and his hadith is hasan, and the other narrators in the chain are trustworthy”. Al-Hafiz also said in al-Fath (11/43): “And its chain is hasan”.

Imam Ibn Hibban (d. 354 H) too has documented the report in his Sahih. ‘Allamah al-Albani says:

حسن

Hasan

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ confirms this:

حديث حسن

A hasan hadith

The question is: what was ‘Umar and his few colleagues doing in a garden, hidden from view, while the Messenger of Allah and the other Sahabah were actively in battle against the allied forces of the pagans? The people, as testified by Umm al-Muminin ‘Aishah, were at the warfront. She was standing
behind the fighting soldiers. So, ‘Umar and his small band were completely away from the front, at the back of everyone else. Was it a tactical land ambush by them?

But, that was not possible! Firstly, it was a trench war. If anything, ‘Umar and his colleagues should be standing with the Prophet at the front – by the trench – preventing the enemies of Allah from successfully crossing over. Secondly, the Messenger did not permit any Sahabi to leave his presence, as reported by the Qur’an about the Battle of Khandaq:

وإذ قالن طائفة منهم يا أهل يثرب لا مقام لكم فارجوها ويستأثروا فريق منهم النبي يقولون إن بيوتنا عورة وما هي بعورة إن يريدون إلا فرارا ولو دخلت عليهم من أقطارها ثم سئلوه الفننة لنهاها وما تلبثوا بها إلا يسيرا ولقد كانوا عاهدوا الله من قبل لا يولون الأدباء وكان عهد الله مستناgain لينفعكم الفرار إن فررتم من الموت أو القتل وإذا لا تمنعون إلا قليلا

And when a party of them said, “O people of Yathrib! You do not stand any chance. Therefore, return”. And a band of them asked for permission of the Prophet, saying: “Truly, our homes are vulnerable!” But they (i.e. their houses) were not vulnerable. They (i.e. those soldiers) only wished to flee! And if the enemy had entered upon them from its (i.e. Madinah’s) borders, and they had been asked to commit sedition (against Islam), they would surely have committed it and would have only hesitated a little.

And indeed they had already made a covenant with Allah not to flee, and a covenant with Allah must be answered for. Say: Running away will not benefit you if you flee from death or killing, and then you will enjoy no more than a little while!”

The verses confirm that the enemy never breached the borders of Madinah. They further establish that the homes of the people of the city were safe. Of course, it was the Battle of Khandaq (i.e. the Battle of the Trench). Therefore, all the fighting was supposed to be done at the trench, not within the boundaries of Madinah. Lastly, there is zero evidence of any deployment of anyone by the Prophet, during the battle, to mount any ambush in any garden in the city!

As such, the presence of ‘Umar and his colleagues in a safe garden had absolutely no military value or legitimacy. Moreover, one of them was masking his face to conceal his identity. Meanwhile, he too had no tactical or strategic reason to use a mask. It is obvious, from the circumstances and his conduct, that he felt shame for what they were doing in the garden, and would not like anyone to identify him with it, if they were detected. But, Umm al-Muminin ‘Aishah knew his voice very well, being his relative. So, it was pointless for him to conceal his identity before her while criticizing ‘Umar.

‘Umar and his colleagues were, without doubt, hiding from battle. They had fled! While the other Muslims were busy preventing the collapse of Madinah by blocking any crossover of the trench by the enemy, he and his colleagues were breathing safely in their hideout. Judging from the panic and instinctive outbursts of ‘Umar, one could also say that he was not aware of the real situation of things in the city. He
apparently thought that the enemy had entered it, and that it was extremely risky to move around. That explains why he moved into, and remained in, the garden in the first place.

At Khaybar, our second khalifah repeated his old feat. Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) records:

أخبرنا أبو العباس محمد بن أحمد المحبوي بمرور نما سعيد بن مسعود ننا عبد الله بن موسى ننا نعم بن حكم عن أبي موسى الخنفسي عن علي رضي الله عنه قال: سار النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم إلى خيبر فلم آتيه بعد عمر رضي الله تعالى عنه وبعد معه الناس إلى مدينتهم أو قصرهم فقاتلوهم فلم يلبثوا أن هزموا عمر وأصحابه فجاووا يجيئونه ويجبينهم فسار


The Prophet, peace be upon him, journeyed to Khaybar. When he arrived there, he appointed ‘Umar (as commander) and appointed some people with him (as his troops) to conquer their city or castle. So, they (‘Umar and his troops) fought them (i.e. the people of Khaybar). But ‘Umar and his troops did not hesitate before fleeing. So, they came back and they (the troops) accused him (‘Umar) of COWARDICE while he too accused them of cowardice.\footnote{7}

Al–Hakim says:

هذا حديث صحيح الإسناد

This hadith has a sahih chain\footnote{8}

Al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) HHconfirms:

صحيح

Sahih\footnote{9}

Imam al–Hindi (d. 975 H) copies a fuller version:

عند علي قال: سار رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم إلى خيبر فلم آتاه رسل الله صلى الله عليه وسلم بعد عمر ومعه الناس إلى مدينتهم وقال قصرهم فقاتلوهم فلم يلبثوا أن هزموا عمر وأصحابه فجاووا يجيئونه ويجبينه فسار ذلك رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم فقال: لأععن عليهم رجلا يحب الله رسوله وحبه الله رسوله يقاتله فتنة حتى يفتح الله له ليس يقرأ فقال الناس لها وما مروا أعناهم برونا أنفسهم رجاء ما قال مكذب رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم ساعة فقال: أيه علي فقالوا: هو أردد قال: ادعو لي لفلا أتيه فتنة ثم نقل فيها ثم أعطاهم اللواء فانطلقت به سعبا خشية أن يحدث رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم فيها حديثا أو في حديثين فقاتلتهم
Narrated ‘Ali:

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, journeyed to Khaybar. When the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, arrived there, he appointed ‘Umar (as commander) and with him some people (as his troops) to conquer their city or castle. So, they (‘Umar and his troops) fought them (i.e. the people of Khaybar). But ‘Umar and his troops did not hesitate before fleeing. So, they came back and he accused them of cowardice while they too (the troops) accused him (‘Umar) of COWARDICE. The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, roundly condemned that and said, “I will certainly appoint over you a man who loves Allah and His Messenger, and Allah and His Messenger too love him. He will fight them until Allah grants him victory. He is not someone who flees.”

So, the people longed for it (i.e. the expedition) and extended their necks, each of them wishing that he be the chosen one. The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, remained silent for a while and then said: “Where is Ali?” They said: “He is sore-eyed.” He said: “Summon him for me.” When I came to him, he opened my eyes and put his saliva on them. Then, he gave the flag to me and so I proceeded fast, fearing that the Messenger of Allah might make a new decision concerning it (i.e. the expedition), or me, until I reached them (i.e. the people of Khaybar). So, I fought them. Then Marhab (the warrior of Khaybar) offered a duel challenge, reciting war poetry and I accepted his duel challenge, reciting war poetry like people do, until we clashed and Allah killed him through my hand. As a result, his companions fled away into their castle, and locked the door. We went to the door and I did not stop trying to break it until Allah opened it. 10

Al–Hindi comments:

والبيزار وسنده حسن

Recorded by al–Bazzar and its chain is hasan.11

‘Ali’s encounter with Marhab is documented by Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) as well:

 حدثنا أبو بكر بن أبي شيبة حدثنا هاشم بن القاسم ح وحدثنا إسحاق بن إبراهيم أخبرنا أبو عامر العقدي كلاهما عن عكرمة ابن عمر ح وحدثنا عبدالله بن عبد الرحمن البارامي وهذا حديثه أخبرنا أبو علي الحنفي عبدالله بن عبدالله المجد حديثنا عكرمة ( وهو ابن عمر ) حديثي إباس بن سلمة حديثي أبي قال

ثم أرسلني إلى علي وهو أرد في فقال لأعطني الراية رجلا يحب الله ورسوله أو يحبه الله ورسوله قال فأتيت عليها...

.... Then he (the Messenger) sent me to ‘Ali, and he (‘Ali) was sore–eyed. So, he (the Prophet) said, “I verily will give the flag to a man who loves Allah and His Messenger or whom Allah and His Messenger love.” So, I went to ‘Ali and brought him, and he was sore–eyed, until I brought him to the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, who applied his saliva to his eyes and he got well.

So, he (the Prophet) gave him the flag and Marhab (at the Khaybar battle ground) came out and said (during the duel), “Khaybar has already known that I am Marhab, a fully–armed and well–tried valorous warrior whenever war comes, spreading its flames.” ‘Ali replied, “I am the one whose mother named him Haydar, like a lion of the forest with a terror–striking countenance. I give them (i.e. my opponents) the measure of sandara (i.e. a heavy blow) in exchange for sa’ (i.e. a small punch).” ‘Ali struck the head of Marhab and killed him. So, the victory was through his hands.12

Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) has recorded the same report13, and Shaykh al–Arnaúṭ says:

إسناده صحيح على شرط مسلم.14

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of Muslim.14

The Prophet of Allah testified that Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali, ‘alaihi al–salam, was NOT a person who fled in any circumstance, however difficult. He too demonstrated that by accepting the challenge of Marhab in a mortal combat. As such, while all the other Sahabah – including Abu Bakr and ‘Umar – were repeatedly fleeing the battlefields, ‘Ali always stayed till the end. The matter, apparently, was very well–known among the Sahabah, which was why some of them did not bother mentioning his name while listing the firm ones at each battle. He made every list by default, and it might be pointless repeating his blessed name while everyone was already aware of this unique status of his.

Imam Ahmad further records another report, with an interesting additional detail:

حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا زيد بن الحباب حدثني الحسين بن وافق حديثي عبد الله بن بريدة حدثني أبي بريدة قال حاضرونا خبير فأخذ اللواء أبو بكر فانصرف ولم يفتح له ثم أخذه من الغد عمر فخرج فرجع ولم يفتح له وأصاب الناس يومئذ شدة وجد فإن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم ائته دافع اللواء غدا إلى رجل يحب الله
We besieged Khaybar. **So, Abu Bakr took the flag and went. But, he did not achieve victory.** Then, the next day, ‘Umar took it (i.e. the flag), and went and returned without achieving victory. On that day, the people encountered hardship and fatigue. Therefore, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “I will tomorrow give the flag to a man who loves Allah and His Messenger, and Allah and His Messenger love him too. **He will not return unless he has achieved victory.**” So, we became absolutely certain that victory would be achieved the next day.

When it was morning, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, performed the morning *Salat*. Then he stood and asked that the flag be brought to him. The people were on their lines. So, he summoned ‘Ali and he (‘Ali) was sore–eyed. Then he spit into his eyes and gave him the flag, and he (‘Ali) **achieved victory.** I was one of those longing for it (i.e. the flag). 15

Shaykh al–Arnaṭ states:

حديث صحيح وهذا إسناد قوي من أجل حسين بن واقف المروزي

**It is a sahih hadith**, and this chain is strong (*qawi*) due to Husayn b. Waqiq al–Maruzi. 16

Apparently, Abu Bakr was the first to flee the battlefield at Khaybar, and then ‘Umar. Marhab must have offered both of them duel challenges – as he did to Amir al–Muminin – which they obviously declined and then sped away. The only way to conquer Khaybar was to kill Marhab, who was their legendary warrior, as ‘Ali demonstrated. The fact that Abu Bakr and ‘Umar returned without victory is evidence that both of them, as army commanders, feared Marhab and therefore avoided him.

Imam al–Hindi copies a related report:

عن عبد الرحمن بن أبي ليلى قال : كان علي يخرج في الشتاء في إزار ورداء نورين خفيفين و... قال : أو ما كنت معنا يا أبي ليلى بخير ؟ فلأني والله قد كنت معكم قال : فإن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم بعد أبي يكر فسّار بالناس قاتلهم حتى رجع إليه وبعث عمر قاتلهم بالناس حتى انتهى إليه فقال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم : لأغتيين الزرايا رجلا يحب الله ورسوله ويفتح الله الله ورسوله يفتح الله له ليس بفرار فأرسل إلي فدعاي فأتمته وأنا أرمد لا أبصر شيئا فقفل في عيني.
'Abd al-Rahman b. Abi Layli:

‘Ali used to come out in winter wearing light clothes and ... he ('Ali) said (to me), “Were you not with us, O Abu Layli, at Khaybar?” I said, “Yes, by Allah, I was with you.” He said, “Verily, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, appointed Abu Bakr as commander and he despatched with (some) people. BUT HE (ABU BAKR) FLED until he returned to him (i.e. the Prophet).

And he appointed ‘Umar too as army commander, and HE ('UMAR) TOO FLED with the people (i.e. his troops) until he got back to him (i.e. the Messenger). So, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, ‘I certainly will give the flag to a man who loves Allah and His Messenger, and Allah and His Messenger love him too. Allah will grant him victory. He is not someone who flees.’ Therefore, he sent for me, and I got to him. I was sore-eyed, and could not see anything. So, he spit into my eye.”

Al–Hindi comments:

واﻟﺒﺰار واﺑﻦ ﺟﺮﻳﺮ وﺻﺤﺢ

Al–Bazzar recorded it, as well as Ibn Jarir (al-Tabari) WHO DECLARED IT SAHIH

At this point, let us do some mathematics:

1. Abu Bakr and ‘Umar used to flee from battlefields. Ali never fled, not even once.

3. ‘Ali accepted and won at least the duel challenge at Khaybar. Abu Bakr and ‘Umar ran away from the same duel challenge.

5. Ali was never accused of cowardice by anyone. Rather, the Prophet testified in favour of his absolute bravery and military doggedness. By contrast, ‘Umar was charged with cowardice by his own troops!

7. Abu Bakr and ‘Umar returned from the battlefield, defeated and humiliated. Meanwhile, ‘Ali never left the battlefield until he had achieved victory.

9. The Messenger of Allah had absolute confidence in ‘Ali’s military prowess, and was completely certain that the latter would never fail in his expeditions. On the other hand, both Abu Bakr and ‘Umar disappointed him in their military assignments, and he apparently did not have full confidence in their military abilities.

The question is: who was braver? Was it Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib? Or, were Abu Bakr and ‘Umar braver than him, as claimed by Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah? Even if we accepted our Shaykh’s re-definition of “bravery” as fearlessness of the heart, how can anyone still claim that Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman were “brave” at all despite that they used to flee the battlefield? Can a person who runs away from battle be said to have a fearless heart? Moreover, what made Amir al–Muminin so firm on the
battlefield? Was it not his fearless heart? From whatever angle we look at it, Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman were timid cowards, while ‘Ali was a true warrior, with a completely fearless heart.

Our Shaykh is well aware that with the above facts, his theory can never stand. So, he goes on a voyage of historical revisionism:

The Prophet, peace be upon him, said before his (‘Ali’s) arrival, “I verily will give the flag to a man who loves Allah and His Messenger, and Allah and His Messenger too love him. Allah will grant victory through his hands.” The flag was never given before that to Abu Bakr or ‘Umar, and neither of them even moved near it. Rather, this (i.e. the claim that Abu Bakr and ‘Umar were given the flag before ‘Ali) is one of the lies.19

But, does that really help him or his two khilifahs?

1. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 6, p. 141, # 25140
4. Ibid
5. Ibid
6. Qur’an 33:13–16
8. Ibid
11. Ibid
13. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 4, p. 51, # 16586
15. Ibid, vol. 5, p. 353, # 23043
18. Ibid
26. Hadith Al-Tair, Investigating Its Authenticity

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

Hadith al-Tair is one of the fabricated lies in the opinion of the people of knowledge.1

Meanwhile, Imam Ibn Asakir (d. 571 H) records:


Birds were given as gifts to the Messenger of Allah. So, he distributed them and left a bird. Then he said, “O Allah, bring to me the most beloved to You of Your creation to eat with me from this bird. So, ‘Ali b. Abi Talib came and entered and ate with him from that bird.2

Imam al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) states about the first narrator:

Abu Ghalib b. al-Bana: The righteous Shaykh, the thiqah (trustworthy) narrator, the hadith transmitter of Baghdad, Abu Ghalib Ahmad b. Imam Abu ‘Ali al-Hasan b. Ahmad b. ‘Abd Allah b. al-Bana al-Baghdadi al-Hanbali.3

Concerning the second narrator, he further says:

The third narrator, Imam al-Daraquṭni, needs no introduction. Nonetheless, let us get al-Dhahabi’s words about him anyway:


Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) says about the fourth narrator:

Muhammad b. Muhklid b. Hafs ... He is **thiqah (trustworthy)**, **thiqah (trustworthy)**, **thiqah (trustworthy)**, well-known.6

Imam al-Dhahabi tells us about the fifth narrator as well:

Hatim b. al-Layth: The **hadith** scientist, the prolific **hadith** narrator, the **thiqah (trustworthy)** narrator, Abu al-Fadhl, al-Baghdadi, al-Jawhari.7

Al-Hafiz returns to inform us about the sixth narrator:

‘Ubayd Allah b. Musa b. Abi al-Mukhtar al-‘Ubsi al-Kufi, Abu Muhammad: **Thiqah (trustworthy)**, he was a Shi‘i.8

Al-Hafiz proceeds about the seventh narrator too:

Finally, ‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) grades the last narrator, al-Suddi:

"وَهَذَا سَنْدٌ حَسَنٌ، رَجُالُهُ ثَقَالٌ غَيرِ السُّدِّيَ وَهُوَ إِسْمَاعِيْلُ بْنِ عَبْدِ الرَّحْمَنَ وَهُوَ صَدَوْقٌ يِهَمُّ. كَمَا فِي "التَّقْرِيبِ."

This chain is *hasan*. Its narrators are trustworthy apart from al-Suddi, and he is Isma’il b. ‘Abd al-Rahman. He was saduq (very truthful), and he hallucinated, as stated in *al-Taqrib*.  

He adds about him:

هو ثقة احتاج به مسلم واسمه إسماعيل بن عبد الرحمن.

He is *thiqah* (trustworthy). (Imam) Muslim has relied upon him as a *hujjah* (in his *Sahih*), and his name is Isma’il b. ‘Abd al-Rahman. 11

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ also states:

*إسْتَنادِهُ حَسَنُ لِأَجْلِ السُّدِّيَ – وَهُوَ إِسْمَاعِيْلُ بْنِ عَبْدِ الرَّحْمَنَ بْنِ أَبِي كَرِيمَةَ – وَبَاقِي رَجُالِهَا ثَقَالٌ*

Its chain is *hasan due to al-Suddi* – and he is Isma’il b. ‘Abd al-Rahman b. Abi Karimah – and the other narrators are trustworthy. 12

Shaykh Dr. Asad has the same grading for him:

٧٠َأَبُو هَمَامُ حَدَّثَنَا أَبُو عُلَيْ أَبِي عَنْ زَيْدٍ بْنِ خَيْثَمَةَ عَنْ إِسْمَاعِيْلٍ الْسُّدِّيَ عَنْ عُكْرُوهَةَ عَنْ أَبِي عيَاسَ... إِسْتَنادِهُ حَسَنَ


Shaykh Dr. Al-‘A’zami is not left out either:

٧٠َأَلْيَضَبُّ عَلِيٌّ بْنُ شَعِيبُ حَدَّثَنَا أَبُو الْبُخَرِيَّ حَدَّثَنَا الأَشْجُعَ عَنْ سَفِيَانِ الْسُّدِّيَ عَنْ أَبِي هِبَيْنَ عَنْ عَائِشَةَ... إِسْتَنادِهُ حَسَنَ

Interestingly, Imam Ibn al-Jawzi (d. 597 H) has documented a similar report of Hadith al-Tair as Imam Ibn Asakir:

Birds were given as gifts to the Messenger of Allah. So, he distributed them. Then he said, “O Allah, bring to me the most beloved to You of Your creation to eat with me from this bird. So, ‘Ali b. Abi Talib came and entered and ate with him from that bird.

This chain is basically the same as that which we have verified above in this chapter. ‘Allamah al-Albani also has this comment about this report:


All the narrators of this chain are trustworthy, except for the difference of opinions concerning al-Suddi, and he is al-Suddi al-Kabir, and his name is Isma’il b. ‘Abd al-Rahman. Since al-Suddi too is thiqah (trustworthy), or at least saduq (very truthful) due to the disputes about him, the sanad is therefore either sahih or hasan. We go with the stricter ruling. As such, we declare that chain of the hadith is hasan due to al-Suddi. All its narrators are reliable, and there is no disconnection whatsoever in the sanad.

Meanwhile, the hadith itself is absolutely sahih due to the existence of massive, overwhelming corroboration (mutaba’at) for al-Suddi. Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H), for instance, declares about Hadith
It has been narrated from Anas by a group of his companions, numbering more than thirty individuals.17

This establishes the tawatur of the hadith from Anas, and shoots the report of al-Suddi from the level of hasan to the highest sahih grade.
27. Hadith Al-Tair, Examining Some Shawahid

The hadith proves that Amir al-Muminin, ‘alaihi al-salam, is the most beloved of all creatures to Allah after His Messenger, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi. This goes directly counter to the claims of the majority of the Ahl al-Sunnah that Abu Bakr, after the Prophet, is the most beloved to Allah in this Ummah. Therefore, a lot of their ‘ulama struggle hard to bring down Hadith al-Tair in order to salvage their sect from collapse or confusion. So, they bring up a lot of “ifs” and “maybes” without ever presenting any explicit, positive evidence for their claims. Meanwhile, apart from the hadith, there are numerous other proofs which nullify the Sunni position. Let us have a look at some of them.

We start with the Verse of al-Mubahala:

And whoever disputes with you concerning him after what has come to you of knowledge, then say: “Come, let us call our sons and your sons, our women and your women, ourselves and yourselves, then we place the Curse of Allah upon the liars.”

It is clear from the verse that some people were debating with the Prophet, opposing what had been revealed to him from his Lord. The Qur’an is explicit: the debate was with the Messenger of Allah alone. It was not with the Ummah. The “yous” in the verse, as well as the phrase “say”, are all singular. Therefore, all the “ours” in it are exclusive to the Prophet. “Our sons”, for instance, do not mean the “sons of the Ummah”.

Rather, they were his sons. His opponents were refusing to accept the Truth which he had brought from his Lord. So, he was commanded to challenge them to a mubahala, where each side would invoke the Curse of Allah upon “whoever” was lying in his claims between the two sides. A condition of the mubahala was that each party must participate in it with his sons and women. As such, the effect of the curse would affect the wrong disputant along with his sons and women.

The question is – why did the Qur’an name the “sons” and “women” as compulsory participants? The reason is apparent. A man usually cares most for himself, his sons, his daughters and his wives. He would not want any harm to come their way. Therefore, if he must involve himself and them together in a mubahala, he is most likely to think twice, and to withdraw from it if he has the slightest doubt in his claims. Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) agrees:
The hearts (lit: the souls) care for their closest people what they do not care for others. They (the non-Muslim disputants) knew that he was the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, and they knew that if they did *mubahala* with him, curse would descend upon them and upon their closest people. So, their fear over themselves became combined with their fear over their closest people.

This caused their withdrawal (from the *mubahala*). Otherwise, the human being prefers to lose his life in order to save his son from death (if the need arises). Moreover, the old man prefers death if his closest people will be in comfort and wealth. And this is very common.2

In simple words, each party in the *mubahala* was to involve in it the people closest to his heart, those people whom he cared most for. So, who were the closest persons to the heart of the Messenger of Allah during his lifetime? This is where trouble sets in for our dear Shaykh:

Know that He (Allah in the Verse of *al-Mubahala*) intended the closest people to us – males and females – from the children and the blood relatives. This was why he called al-Hasan and al-Husayn from the sons and called Faṭimah from the women and called ‘Ali from his men. There was no one else who was closer to him, in terms of blood relationship, than these people.

They were those over whom he spread the *kisa* (cloak), AND THE *MUBAHALA* WOULD ONLY SUCCEED THROUGH THE CLOSEST OF PEOPLE TO HIM. Otherwise, if they (both parties) had done it with their distant blood relatives, even if such had been superior in the Sight of Allah, its purpose would have been defeated. This was because the intention was that they (the non-Muslim party) should call their closest people, as he (Muhammad) should also call the closest people to him.3

So, ‘Ali, Fatimah, al-Hasan and al-Husayn, ‘*alaihim al-salam*, were the closest people to the Prophet’s heart. He cared for them more than he did for anyone else on the face of the earth. At the practical level, the Messenger of Allah, for instance, cared more for ‘Ali than he did for Abu Bakr and ‘Umar! He equally cared more for *Umm Abiha* Faṭimah than he did for *Umm al-Muminin* ‘Aishah. If this had not been the case, then the *mubahala* challenge would have been worthless, as the non-Muslim opponents were
directed to summon people closest to their hearts. For a proper mubahala, things had to be equal on both sides.

Our Shaykh asserts that the Messenger’s care for ‘Ali, Faṭimah, al-Hasan and al-Husayn was based upon their blood relationship to him. He however misses the fact that al-‘Abbas was legally a closer blood relative to the Prophet than ‘Ali! This is why the right of the uncle to inherit overrules that of the cousin, as Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H) states:

ولا خلاف بين أهل العلم إن ابن العم لا يرت مع العم

There is no difference of opinion among the scholars that the cousin cannot inherit with the presence of the uncle.4

Therefore, if the Prophet was choosing people on the basis of their blood closeness to him, he would have picked al-‘Abbas – who was already a practising Muslim then – and not ‘Ali. Alternatively, he could have selected both al-‘Abbas and ‘Ali, and possibly some other cousins like Ibn ‘Abbas. Sensing the frailty of his own submission, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah attempts to apply some cosmetics to it:

وأي المباهلة نزلت سنة عشر لما قدم وقد نجرا الوالد ولم يكن النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم قد يقبل من أعمامه إلا العباس والعباس لم يكن من السباقين الأوليين ولا كان له اختصاص كعلي وآما بنو عمه فلم يكن فيهم مثل علي ومكان جعفر قد قتل قبل ذلك

The Verse of al-Mubahala was revealed in 10 AH when the delegation of Najran arrived. The Prophet, peace be upon him, had no other uncle other than al-‘Abbas then, and al-‘Abbas was not among the early converts to Islam, and did not have the exclusive qualities of ‘Ali. As for his (i.e. the Prophet’s) cousins, none of them was like ‘Ali, and Ja’far had been killed before then.5

Here, our Shaykh contradicts his other position. Was the choice of the Prophet for the participants in the mubahala from his side based solely upon their blood relationship to him or upon their individual merits? A question also arises as to why ‘Aishah and all other wives of the Prophet were excluded. After all, the word used in the Verse of al-Mubahala is nisa, which literally means “women”.

As such, it covered both wives and daughters. In fact, everywhere else in the Qur’an, the phrase “women (nisa) of the Prophet” always referred to his wives6! In addition, in over 90% of cases, the word “women (nisa)” in the Book of Allah means “wives”7. So, it is safe to conclude that the phrase “our women” in the Verse of al-Mubahala is addressed first to the wives, and then to the daughters. Our Sunni brothers have never been able to explain why the wives were not called to join in the mubahala.

In any case, none of the wives of the Prophet – and they were also his primary “women” – was from his closest blood relatives. That would have been incest anyway, and therefore impossible. The fact that the
word “women” has been used in the verse, and not “daughters”, strengthens the theory that the selection process was NOT based upon blood relationship. Allah Himself selected the people whom He knew to be the closest to the heart of His Messenger to participate with him in the mubahala. He mentioned the categories to which they belonged, deliberately leaving them open for a clear point. Then the Prophet filled in the names. Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H) declares:

There have been mutawatir reports in the tafsir books from ‘Abd Allah b. ‘Abbas and others that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, on the Day of al-Mubahala, held the hands of ‘Ali, Hasan and Husayn, and they positioned Faṭimah behind them. Then he said, “These are our sons, ourselves and our women. So, bring yourselves, your sons and your women. Then we do mubahala and place the Curse of Allah upon the liars (among us).”

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah corroborates him:

As for the Verse of al-Ibtihal (another word for al-Mubahala), what is narrated in the sahih (hadith) is that when it was revealed, the Prophet, peace be upon him, held the hand of ‘Ali, Faṭimah, Hasan and Husayn to do mubahala with them (against the Najranis). However, he limited that to them because they were the closest of all people to him.

This was because he did not have a son who would have walked with him. However, he used to say about al-Hasan, “This son of mine is a master”. Therefore, both of them (i.e. al-Hasan and al-Husayn) were his sons. As for his women, he had no other surviving daughter except Faṭimah, may Allah be pleased with her.

Well, the Prophet had other “women”, such as ‘Aishah, Hafsah, Umm Salamah, and several others. Why did he not call them?

No doubt, the people that the Messenger of Allah cared most for were ‘Ali, Faṭimah, al-Hasan and al-Husayn. Luckily, by Allah’s Mercy, these people – who were the closest to his heart – fell into the same categories as what obtains in most similar cases. Therefore, it was possible to organize a mubahala with the Najrani delegation on the same terms. There is a particular point on the word “ourselves".
It is represented by two people, namely the Prophet and Amir al-Muminin, in the *mubahala*. The obvious implication of this is that the Messenger of Allah cared of ‘Ali at the same level as he cared for himself. In other words, Imam ‘Ali was as close to the heart of the Prophet as the latter himself was to his own heart. This was why it was possible for Amir al-Muminin to fit into the same category as the Messenger in the *mubahala*.

Of course, when someone is close to your heart and you care for them, that is love! So, the most beloved of mankind to the Prophet of Allah were ‘Ali, Faṭimah, al-Hasan and al-Husayn, and this is confirmed by the Qur’an. Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah would have us believe that this love was based only upon blood relationship. However, Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) records:

> حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا اسماعيل ثنا لبث عن عمرو بن مرة عن معاوية بن سويد بن مقرن عن البراء بن عازب قال كنتا جلوسا عند النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم فقال ... أن أوسط عرى الإيمان أن تحب في الله وتبغض في الله


We were sitting with the Prophet, peace be upon him, and he said ... “Verily, the central handhold of faith (*iman*) is that you love for the sake of Allah and that you hate for the sake of Allah.”

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ says:

> حديث حسن يشواهد

It is a *hadith* that is *hasan* through its witnesses.

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) also records this *hadith*:

> إن أوثق عرى الإسلام: أن تحب في الله وتبغض في الله

Verily, the strongest handhold of Islam is that you love for the sake of Allah and hate for the sake of Allah.

The ‘Allamah states:
Hasan

Is there anyone with a better faith (iman), or who is a better Muslim, than the Messenger of Allah? Of course, there is none! Therefore, his love for ‘Ali, Faṭīmah, al–Hasan and al–Husayn was purely for the sake of Allah. They were the most beloved creatures to Allah after His Messenger. So, he loved them too more than everyone else. Our Lord also loves Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali b. Abi Talib more than Faṭīmah, al–Hasan and al–Husayn. As such, His Prophet loved ‘Ali as he loved himself. These facts were very widely known throughout the Islamic world during the Messenger’s lifetime.

Even non–Muslims were aware of the names of the most beloved human beings to Muhammad. This was why the Najrani delegation raised no objection whatsoever to anyone in the Prophet’s team for the mubahala. They knew that those were the closest people to his heart, whom he cared for most, above everyone else. As such, they were the perfect and the only valid selection for the mubahala from his side.

The Messenger was absolutely trustworthy. He never would have cheated. Since he expected the other side to involve their most beloved people in the mubahala – in line with the rules of the game, he too would certainly have done like that. Moreover, if it had been known that there had been other people more beloved to him than his team, his own followers would have suspected the truth of his prophethood and his personal honesty. Otherwise, why would he need to cheat if he was correct in his claims? What would he have been afraid of?

Besides, the Najrani delegation too would have objected to his selection. They would have firmly demanded for an equal playing field. Since all parties were required to bring the most beloved of people to them into the mubahala, why should the Prophet do otherwise? In fact, it was most probably what convinced them to opt out of the mubahala. Muhammad would never have involved his team in it – knowing the implications – unless he was absolutely truthful in his claims. The Najrani delegation, on their part, never dared involve their own teams, since they had doubts about their submissions!

As expected, Umm al–Muminin ‘Aishah was not happy about the state of things, and did challenge the Messenger of Allah on it. Al–Hafiz (d. 852 H) states:

وأخرج أحمد وأبو داود والنسائي وسند صحيح عن النعمان بن بشير قال استأذن أبو بكر على النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم فسمع صوت عائشة عائشة وهي تقول والله لقد علمت أن عليا أحب إليك من أبي

Ahmad, Abu Dawud and al–Nasai have recorded with a sahih chain from al–Nu’man b. Bashir:

Abu Bakr sought permission to enter the house of the Prophet, peace be upon him, and heard the voice of ‘Aishah, very loud, and she was saying (to the Prophet), “I have known that ‘Ali is more beloved to you than my father.”

13

14
Imam Ahmad also has this:

 حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا أبو تعييم ثنا يونس ثنا العجز بن حريث قال قال النعمان بن بشير قال استاذن أبو بكر على رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم فسمع صوت عائشة عالية وهي تقول والله لقد عرفت ان عليا أحب إليك من أبي ومنى مرتين أو ثلاثا فاستاذن أبو بكر فدخل فأمهى إليها فقال يا بنت فلانة انا سمعك ترفعين صوتك على رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم


Abu Bakr sought the permission of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, to enter his house, and heard the voice of ‘Aishah, very loud. She was saying, “I swear by Allah, I have discovered that ‘Ali is more beloved to you than my father and me.” She said it twice or thrice. So, Abu Bakr sought permission (again) and entered, and reached for her, and said, “O daughter of such–and–such woman! Did I hear you raising your voice upon the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him?”

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ says:

إسناده حسن

Its chain is hasan.16

Apparently, the Prophet had tried to conceal the matter from her due to her notorious jealousy. But, it was too obvious, especially after the Incident of al-Mubahala. So, she went on the offensive, and never relented thereafter. Eventually, she commanded a very bloody armed insurrection against Amir al-Muminin during his khilafah, and thousands of Muslims died tragically as a result. It is very significant that the Messenger of Allah did not deny her claim. If she was wrong, he would have told her.

Yet, despite that, Umm al-Muminin ‘Aishah continued to re–write history after the death of the Messenger. ‘Allamah al-Albani reports her:

فقال الإمام أحمد (214/6) : حدثنا عبد الواحد الحداد عن كهمس عن عبد الله بن شقيق، قال: قلت لعائشة: أي الناس كان أحب إلى رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم؟ قالت: عائشة، قلت: فمن الرجال؟ قالت: أبيها


I said to ‘Aishah, “Which of mankind was the most beloved to the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him?” ‘Aishah said, “Aishah”. I said, “What about among the men?” She replied, “Her father.”17
The ‘Allamah states:

قلت: وهذا إسناد صحيح رجاله كلهم ثقات رجال الصحيح

I say: This chain is *sahih*. Its narrators are trustworthy, narrators of the *Sahih*.

Is that not strange? Despite “knowing” and “discovering” what she did, she still went ahead to claim this! Meanwhile, was she really the best of *mankind* after the Messenger of Allah as she was telling people? Besides, why did the Prophet exclude her from the *mubahala* despite that she was one of his “women”?

Was ‘Aishah telling the people that the Messenger cheated?!

---

1. Qur’an 3:61
3. Ibid, vol. 7, p. 125
6. See for instance, Qur’an 33:30, 33:32
10. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaout], vol. 4, p. 286, # 18547
11. Ibid
13. Ibid
15. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arnaout], vol. 4, p. 275, # 18444
18. Ibid
28. Hadith Al-Ta’rif, Understanding Its Background

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

The hadith which is narrated from Ibn ‘Umar, “We were not able to recognize the hypocrites during the lifetime of the Prophet, peace be upon him, except through their hatred of ‘Ali”, verily this is known to all scholars that it is a lie. This is because hypocrisy has several signs and causes apart from hatred of ‘Ali. So, how could the hatred of ‘Ali have been the only sign of hypocrisy?

Our Shaykh then proceeds:

If he had said “We used to recognize the hypocrites through their hatred of ‘Ali” then he would have been correct. They (the hypocrites) were also recognized through their hatred of the Ansar, rather through the hatred of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar, and through the hatred of these people. This is because everyone who hates anyone who is known to have been loved by the Prophet, peace be upon him, and who also loved the Prophet, peace be upon him, such hatred is a sign of hypocrisy.

This was during the lifetime of the Prophet, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi. Our Shaykh accepts that hatred of ‘Ali, ‘alaihi al-salam, was truly then a sign of hypocrisy. What he rejects is the possibility that hatred of Amir al-Muminin was the only sign to recognize hypocrisy – something that is NOT claimed in the hadith anyway! To him, the determining question is: did the Prophet love the person being hated? If the answer were positive, then such hatred was unmistakable evidence of hypocrisy.

Under this principle, anyone who hated Amir al-Muminin during the lifetime of the Messenger was certainly a hypocrite. Our Shaykh has no problem with that. But then, he further insists that the same rule applied in favour of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar too. It is his belief that the Prophet loved both of them more than Amir al-Muminin. Therefore, hatred of either Abu Bakr or ‘Umar would be an even bigger form of hypocrisy.
What about events after the death of the Messenger? Was love or hatred of someone, by the Prophet during his lifetime, evidence of their permanent, immutable status? In simpler words, once an individual was able to earn the love of Allah and His Messenger, was it ever possible for him to forfeit it? This question stands at the centre of our research in this chapter. The Qur’an states categorically several times that any individual who has become Allah’s beloved can also turn into His enemy anytime! For instance, Allah says to all His prophets:

And indeed it has been revealed to you (O Muhammad), as it was revealed to those before you: if you commit idolatry, then surely all your deeds will be in vain, and you will certainly be among the losers.3

The Qur’an also states:

Say: “I fear, if I disobey my Lord, the torment of a Mighty Day.”4

Therefore, the love of Allah for Muhammad and all His promises of Paradise to him were conditioned upon his continued obedience and servitude to his Lord Alone. Should he have become otherwise during his lifetime, Allah would have hated him and thrown him into Hellfire. As such, Muhammad remained in constant fear of disobeying his Lord till his death. This was the case with the most beloved of all creation to Allah. Apparently, the same condition applied indiscriminately to all the Sahabah, and to all beings till the Hour. So, even if any of them had earned the love of Allah and His Prophet, the story did not end there. If he ever did certain acts, before or after the Messenger’s death, he would forfeit such love.

Before proceeding further, we must ask whether the Messenger of Allah, during his lifetime, loved ‘Ali or not. Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) answers with this hadith:

حدثنا قتيبة بن سعيد ومحمد بن عباد (وقالا حدثنا حاتم (وهو ابن إسماعيل) عن يكير بن مسمر عن عامر بن سعد بن أبي وقاص عن أبيه قال أمر معاوية بن أبي سفيان سعدا فقال ما منك أن تسب أبا النراب؟ فقال أما ذكرت ثلاثا قالهن له رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم فلن أشبه لأن تكون لي واحدة منهم أحب إلي من حمر النعمة سمعت رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم يقول له خلفه في بعض مغازيه فقال له علي يا رسول الله خلفتني من النساء والصبيان؛ فقال له رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم أما ترضى أن تكون مي مزمنة هارون من موسى إلا أن لبهدى وسمعته يقول يوم خير لأعطني الرأية رجلا يحب الله ورسوله ويبغض الله ورسوله قال فتطالنا فيها فقال ادعوا لي عليا فأتي به أربع فقبض في عينه ودفع الرأية إليها ففتقح الله عليه ولهما نزلت هذه الآية فقال تعالى: نذروا أبناءكما وأبنائكم [3/آل عمران/61] دعا رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم عليا وفاقة وحسنا وحبسنا فإذن اللههم هؤلاء أهلي
Mu’awiyah commanded Sa’d, and therefore said, “What prevented you from cursing Abu al-Turab (i.e. ‘Ali)?” So, he (Sa’d) replied, “As long as I remember three things which the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said about him, I will never curse him. If just one of them had been for me, it would have been dearer to me than a red camel. I heard the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, saying to him. He made him his khalifah during one of his military expeditions. So, ‘Ali said to him, “O Messenger of Allah, are you leaving me behind with women and children?”

So, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said to him, “Are you not pleased that you are to me of the status of Harun to Musa except that there is no prophethood after me?” And I heard him saying on the Day of Khaybar, “I will give the flag to a man who loves Allah and His Messenger, and Allah and His Messenger too love him.” So, we longed for it (i.e. the flag).

Then he said, “Call ‘Ali for me”, and he was brought to him. He was sore-eyed. He applied saliva to his eye and gave the flag to him, and Allah granted him victory. And when this verse was revealed {Say: Come, let us call our sons and your sons....} [3/61], the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, called ‘Ali, Faṭimah, Hasan and Husayn, and said, “O Allah! These are my family.”

There are three quick points from this hadith, with specific reference to this chapter:

1. Mu’awiyah commanded Sa’d to do something, before asking him why he (Sa’d) refused to curse ‘Ali.

2. Sa’d did not have any of those three merits mentioned for ‘Ali, and very strongly wished he did any of them.

3. Allah and His Messenger loved ‘Ali, and he loved them too.

So, what did Mu’awiyah command Sa’d to do? In order to uncover what that was, we must pay attention to the former’s question:

ما منعك أن تسب أبا التراب؟

What prevented you from cursing Abu al-Turab (i.e. ‘Ali)?

In classical Arabic, this sentence structure was used to ask why a direct order had been disobeyed, by the commandant himself. In other words, if A ordered B to, say, hit C, and B refused to do so, then A would say to B, “What prevented you from hitting C?” The other manner in which it was applied was where A did not command B to do something, but was nonetheless unpleasantly surprised or shocked that B had not done it. So A would ask, “What prevented you from doing such–and–such?”
An example is in this verse:

ةَبْتُ أَمَّا مَنَعَكَ أَنْ تَسْجَدَ لَمَّا خَلَقْتُ لَيْبَيْدُ أَسْتَكْبَرْتَ أَمْ كَنْتَ مِنَ الْخَالِقِينَ

He (Allah) said, “O Iblis! What prevented you from prostrating yourself to one whom I have created with Both My Hands?!”\(^6\)

Another is here:

أَلَّا تَسْجَدَ إِذَا أَمْرَتَكَ

He (Allah) said, “What prevented you (O Iblis) that you did not prostrate when I commanded you personally?”\(^7\)

An example of the other use of that expression can be found here:

مَا مَنَعَكَ إِذْ رَأَيْتَهُمْ قَتّاً

He (Musa) said, “O Harun! What prevented you when you saw them going astray?”\(^8\)

We know that the situation of Sa’d fell into the first category. There was an explicit order to do something. As such, from Mu’awiyah’s question, we realize that he had ordered Sa’d to curse ‘Ali. Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah agrees:

وَأَمَّا حَدِيثَ سَعَدَ لِمَا أُمِرَ مَعَاوِيَةَ بِالْعَلُوَّ فَأَيْبَى قَالَ مَا مَنَعَكَ أَنْ تَسْبِ عَلَى بْنِ أَبِي طَالِبٍ فَقَالَ ثَلَاثَ قَالِهَا رَسُولُ اللَّهِ صلى الله عليه وسلم فَلَنَّ أَسْبَحَ إِلَيْهِ إِنْ كَانَ لِي وَاحِدَةٌ مِنْهُنَّ أَحْبُبَ إِلَيْهِ مِنْ حَمَرِ النَّعْمَانَ لَنَحْبُعُ إِلَيْهِ رُواهُ مَسْلِمٌ فِي صَحيحهُ

As for the hadith of Sa’d, when Mu’awiyah commanded him to curse, and he refused, and he (Mu’awiyah) therefore said, “What prevented you from cursing ‘Ali b. Abi Talib?”; and he replied, “There are three things that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said. So, I will never curse him. If just one of them had been for me, it would have been dearer to me than a red camel”, this hadith is sahih. Muslim has narrated it.\(^9\)

In simpler words, Mu’awiyah ordered Sa’d to curse someone who was loved by the Messenger during his lifetime. So, one asks: did ‘Ali forfeit this love after the Prophet’s death, before Mu’awiyah’s command to Sa’d? Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah even has some more news for us:
What is known is that Allah has certainly put the love of the Sahabah in the hearts of every Muslim, especially love of the *khalifahs*, may Allah be pleased with them, especially love of Abu Bakr and ‘Umar. This is because the generality of the Sahabah and Tabi’in loved them both, and they (i.e. Sahabah and Tabi’in) were the best of generations. But, the matter was not the same for ‘Ali, for A LOT of the Sahabah and Tabi’in used to hate, curse and fight him.10

The question is: why? Had ‘Ali had forfeited the love of Allah and His Messenger for him? Had he become worthy of hatred, curses and armed hostility? This is the big test for our Sunni brothers. If ‘Ali had not forfeited the love of Allah and His Messenger for himself, then those Sahabah and Tabi’in who hated, cursed or fought him had forfeited their own, if any! Allah has said:

And Allah does NOT love the unjust people.11

It all boils down to whether those Sahabah and Tabi’in treated ‘Ali justly by hating, cursing and fighting him. If they had NOT done so, then they all forfeited Allah’s prior love for them with those unjust actions. In line with our Shaykh’s words, they also turned hypocrites:

This is because *everyone* who hates *anyone* who is known to have been loved by the Prophet, peace be upon him, and who also loved the Prophet, peace be upon him, such hatred is a sign of hypocrisy.12

The Sunni dilemma explodes here. Their theology is based on a rigid theory that all the Sahabah earned Allah’s love and never forfeited it. How do they treat the case of those of them who hated, cursed and fought ‘Ali – like Mu’awiyah and Umm al-Muminin ‘Aishah? Our Sunni brothers want to eat the cake, and still have it! To them, those Sahabah were not unjust people, and therefore never forfeited Allah’s love for them. Does this mean that ‘Ali truly deserved their hatred, curses and armed hostility? Sunni Islam says “no” again. ‘Ali remained a loyal, beloved friend of Allah throughout his lifetime, and never deserved anyone’s hatred, curse or hostility!

The matter takes a new dimension with this *hadith* of the Prophet, copied by ‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H):
Whosoever loves ‘Ali has loved me. And whosoever loves me has loved Allah the Almighty. Moreover, whosoever hates ‘Ali has hated me. And whosoever hates me has hated Allah the Almighty. 13

The ‘Allamah comments:

Al–Mukhlis recorded it in al–Fawaid al–Muntaqat (10/5/1) with a sahih chain from Umm Salamah, she said: “I testify that I heard the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, saying:” and he (al–Mukhlis) mentioned it (i.e. the hadith). 14

Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) also records:


Al–Hakim says:

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs. 16

Al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) concurs:
(Sahih) upon the standard of al-Bukhari and Muslim.\footnote{17}

The game changes here completely. Allah made the love of ‘Ali an umbilical part of His Own love. He equally made the hatred of ‘Ali like that. This grand merit was exclusive to ‘Ali alone among all the Sahabah. A few points can be gleaned from it:

1. Allah would \textit{never} hate ‘Ali, because doing so would mean hating Himself and His Messenger.

3. Therefore, Allah – in His infinite wisdom, justice and mercy – would always protect ‘Ali from doing anything that could harm His love for him, just as He did with His Prophet.

5. There can be no excuse or justification \textit{ever} for hating ‘Ali – not even ignorance or mistake – just as there can be none for hating Allah or His Messenger. The love of Allah, His Messenger and ‘Ali is one, and so is their hatred.

7. Whosoever hates ‘Ali – whether by the heart, or by words, or by deeds – is guilty of hating Allah and His Messenger. As such, all the Sahabah who hated, cursed or fought ‘Ali hated Allah and His Messenger – no matter what the Sunnis believe or say.

This is the point. The Sahabah, like the rest of the Ummah, earned, lost, re-gained, re-lost, etc Allah’s love as well, depending on their current actions. This was the case even during the Prophet’s lifetime. Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) records about the case of Buraydah, a prominent Sahabi:

\begin{quote}


\begin{quote}

I hated ‘Ali with a hatred that I never hated anyone else.... And he (the Prophet) said (to me), “Do you hate ‘Ali?” I said, “Yes”. He said, “Do not hate him, and if you love him, then increase your love for him".... Therefore, \textbf{after the statement of the Messenger of Allah}, peace be upon him, \textbf{there was no person among all mankind who was more beloved to me than ‘Ali}.\footnote{18}

Shaykh al-Arnauṭ says:

\end{quote}

\end{quote}

It is a \textit{sahih hadith}, and this chain is \textit{hasan} due to ‘Abd al-Jalil.\footnote{19}
Buraydah was an extreme hater of Allah and His Messenger. At that point, he certainly had lost Allah’s love for him. However, when the Prophet advised him, and he obeyed, he re-earned Allah’s love once more. During his anti-‘Ali days, whoever hated him was NOT a hypocrite. In fact, it could be praiseworthy to hate him then. Meanwhile, the moment he loved ‘Ali above everyone else except the Messenger of Allah, it became haram to hate him.

The bottomline is: the Sahabah – like everyone else – fluctuated between love and hatred of Allah and His Messenger, depending upon their current actions. So, it may be compulsory to love them at one point, and haram to do so at another. As such, love or hatred of any of them was not (and is not) a failproof measure to determine anyone’s hypocrisy.

The only exception among them was ‘Ali. He stayed permanently within Allah’s love, and was protected by Him from ever losing it, till his death. Therefore, hatred of him – like that of the Prophet – always produces the same result anytime anywhere. It was, and still is – after that of the Messenger – the best bet to unearth the hypocrites.
29. Hadith Al-Ta’rif, Proving Its Authenticity

Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H) records:

\[
\]

We were able to recognize the hypocrites among the Ansar only through their hatred of ‘Ali.\(^1\)

Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) says about the first narrator:

\[
\text{Abd Allah b. Ahmad b. Muhammad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Abu ‘Abd al-Rahman: son of the Imam, thiqah (trustworthy).}\(^2\)
\]

Of course, Imam Ahmad needs no introduction. But, let’s get the verdict of al-Hafiz anyway:

\[
\text{Ahmad b. Muhammad b. Hanbal b. Hilal b. Asad al-Shaybani al-Maruzi, a Baghdad resident, Abu ‘Abd Allah: One of the Imams, thiqah (trustworthy), hafiz, jurist, hujjah (an authority).}\(^3\)
\]

Concerning the third narrator, al-Hafiz says:

\[
\text{Al-Aswad b. ‘Amir al-Shami, he lived in Baghdad, and was nicknamed Abu ‘Abd al-Rahman and given the laqab Shadhan: Thiqah (trustworthy).}\(^4\)
\]

The fourth narrator is like that as well, as stated by al-Hafiz:

\[
\text{Israel ben Yonass ben Abi Eschac sibbi the hammad ben Abou Yousif the khowfi Thiqah talk with me a hajja.}
\]
Israil b. Yunus b. Abi Ishaq al-Sabi’i al-Hamdani, Abu Yusuf al-Kufi: *Thiqah (trustworthy)*. He is criticized *without* evidence.\(^5\)

Al-A’\=amash, the fifth narrator, is *thiqah* (trustworthy) too, according to al-Hafiz:

سلیمان بن مهران الأسدی الكاهلی أبو محمد الكوفی الأعمش ثقة حافظ عارف بالقراءات ورع لکنه بدلس

Sulayman b. Mahrân al-\=Asadi al-Kahili, Abu Muhammad al-Kufi al-A’\=amash: *Thiqah (trustworthy)*, *hafiz* (*a hadith scientist*), a scholar of *al-qiraat* (Qur’anic recitation modes), pious. *However, he used to do tadlis.*\(^6\)

About the last narrator, al-Hafiz has these words:

ذکوان أبو صالح السمان الزيادات المدني ثقة بیت

Dhakwan Abu Salih al-Saman al-Zayat al-Madani: *Thiqah (trustworthy), thabt (accurate).*\(^7\)

All the narrators are therefore trustworthy, and the chain is well-connected. The only issue is that al-A’\=amash was a *mudalis*, and has narrated in an ‘an-‘an manner. So, does this affect the *hadith*? The answer is a negative. Al-A’\=amash’s ‘an-‘an reports from Abu Salih are accepted by scholars of the Ahl al-Sunnah. They apparently reject any notion that al-A’\=amash did *tadlis* in his reports from Abu Salih, even in his ‘an-‘an reports. For instance, Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records this ‘an-‘an chain in his *Sahih*:

وحدثني زهير بن حرب حدثنا جرير عن الأعمش عن أبي صالح عن أبي مروة

Zuhayr b. Harb – Jarir – al-A’\=amash – Abu Salih – Abu Hurayrah\(^8\)

‘\=Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H)\(^9\), Shaykh Shu’ayb al-Arnau\=t\(^10\), Imam al-Tirmidhi (d. 279 H)\(^11\), Shaykh Dr. Asad\(^12\), and Shaykh Dr. Al-A’\=zami\(^13\) have all also declared chains containing ‘an-‘an transmission by al-A’\=amash from Abu Salih to be *sahih*. With this, it is obvious that the *hadith* of Abu Sa’\=id al-Khudri above, recorded by Imam Ahmad, has a perfectly *sahih* chain.

The *hadith* establishes some very crucial points. The first is that there were hypocrites among the Ansar. Of course, the Ansar were Sahabah. Therefore, there were hypocrites among the Sahabah. Interestingly, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah agrees on this point too:

ولهذا قال احمد بن حنبل وغيره من العلماء انه لم يكن من المهاجرين من نافق و إنما كان النافق في قبائل...الأنصار

The *hadith* establishes some very crucial points. The first is that there were hypocrites among the Ansar. Of course, the Ansar were Sahabah. Therefore, there were hypocrites among the Sahabah. Interestingly, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah agrees on this point too:
This is why Ahmad b. Hanbal and other scholars said that there was no hypocrite among the Muhajirun and that hypocrisy existed only within the tribes of the Ansar.

And this is why hypocrisy is mentioned only in the Madinan surwar (chapters of the Qur’an). As for the Makkani surwar, there is no mention in them of hypocrites. 14

Well, in one of the earliest Makkani surah, Allah does mention the existence of Muslims “in whose hearts is a disease” during the Makkani era 15. Apparently, our Shaykh and the classical Sunni scholars missed that crucial fact!

Whatever the case, the fact that hypocrites existed among the Ansar – at the least – fatally undermines the Sunni doctrine that all the Sahabah earned Allah’s love, and that none of them ever forfeited it. Allah does not love hypocrites. By contrast, He has cursed them:

Allah has promised the hypocrites, men and women, and the disbelievers, the Fire of Jahannam. They shall remain therein forever. It will be sufficient for them. Allah has also cursed them, and for them is the lasting torment. 16

So, there were people cursed by Allah, and who shall reside forever in Jahannam, among the Sahabah.

The second point in the hadith is that the righteous Sahabah were unable to recognize the hypocritical Sahabah except through the latter’s hatred of ‘Ali. It is noteworthy that there is no claim whatsoever that hatred of Amir al-Muminin was the only sign of hypocrisy. Rather, it was the most effective, the only failproof tool. All the other signs – such as lying, failure to fulfil promises, laziness during Salat, and so on – could be found in some people who were not hypocrites too, albeit in smaller quantities. However, as for hatred of ‘Ali, it is an absolute proof of hypocrisy. It is wholly impossible for a true believer to hate him in any circumstance, in line with the testimony of the Messenger of Allah.

Imam Muslim records:

‘Ali said: “I swear by the One Who split up the seed and created something living, the *Ummi* Prophet verily informed me that none loves me except a believer and that none hates me except a hypocrite.”  

Imam Ahmad also records his *mutaba’ah* for Ibn Abi Shaybah:

 حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي نا وكتب لنا الأعمش عن عدي بن ثابت عن زر بن حبيش عن علي رضي الله عنه قال عبد إلى النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم انه لا يحبك الا مؤمن ولا يغضبك الا منافق


The Prophet, peace be upon him, informed me saying, “None loves you except a believer, and none hates you except a hypocrite.”  

Shaykh al-Arnaūṭ comments:

إسناده صحيح على شرط الشيخين

Its chain is *sahih* upon the standard of the two Shaykhs  

Imam al-Tirmidhi has also a third *mutaba’ah* for Waki’:

 حدثنا عيسى بن عثمان ابن أخي حيبي بن عيسى حدثنا أبو عيسى الرملي عن الأعمش عن عدي بن ثابت عن زر بن حبيش عن علي قال لقد عهد إلى النبي الأمي صلى الله عليه وسلم أنه لا يحبك إلا مؤمن ولا يغضبك إلا منافق


The Ummi Prophet, peace be upon him, had informed me saying, “None loves you except a believer and none hates you except a hypocrite.”  

Al-Tirmidhi states:

 هذا حديث حسن صحيح

This *hadith* is *hasan sahih*.  

‘Allamah al-Albānī confirms:
30. Hadith Al-Tashbih, Establishing Its
Authenticity

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

Rather, interpreting it like that is impossible, because there is none who is equal to the Messenger of Allah, neither ‘Ali nor any other person.¹

We agree with our Shaykh that neither Abu Bakr nor ‘Umar was like, similar or equal to, the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi, in absolutely any way or form. However, it seems that the Shaykh has not properly understood the Shi’i position. We never claim total equality between the Prophet and the Amir.

What we profess, instead, is that ‘Ali, ‘alaihi al-salam, reached the level of the Messenger in many of his merits. In other words, in a lot of qualities, ranks and statuses, both the Prophet and the Amir were, and are, equal. However, in all others, the Messenger of Allah was, and is, infinitely superior to ‘Ali. Overall, the Prophet was, and is, the master, teacher and saviour of ‘Ali in both this world and the next.

Imam al-Nasai (d. 303 H) records an authentic hadith that confirms just that:


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “If the Banu Walî‘ah do not desist, I will appoint over them a man who is exactly like myself to implement my command among them. So, he will execute the combatants and take the offspring as war captives.”

I had not even moved when ‘Umar held my cloth and asked, “Who is he referring to?” I replied, “He is not referring to you or your companion (i.e. Abu Bakr).” He said, “In that case, who is he referring to?” So, I said, “(He is) referring to the one repairing the shoe.” And ‘Ali was repairing a shoe.²

‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) says about this report:
I say: This chain, all its narrators are trustworthy. However, Abu Ishaq – and he is al–Sabi’i – was a mudalis, and he became confused, and his son Yunus narrated from him after he had become confused.  

So, all the narrators are trustworthy. However, Abu Ishaq was a mudalis, and has narrated in an ‘an–‘an manner. Moreover, his son, Yunus, allegedly narrated from him only after he (Abu Ishaq) had become confused. These are ‘Allamah al–Albani’s only objections to the authenticity of the hadith.

The arguments of our ‘Allamah are a bit disappointing. While it is true that Abu Ishaq was a mudalis, his tadlis was largely of the harmless grade. Therefore, his ‘an–‘an reports are accepted without objection. Let us briefly examine how the muhadithun of the Ahl al–Sunnah have treated a well–known, strictly ‘an–‘an narrative of Abu Ishaq. Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records:


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “Verily, the boy killed by al–Khidhr was created an unbeliever. If he had lived, he would have grieved his parents with his obstinate rebellion (against Allah) and disbelief (in Allah).”  

Abu Ishaq has narrated it ‘an–‘an, and Imam Muslim has nonetheless accepted the hadith as sahih. Imam Ahmad b. Hanbal (d. 241 H) has also included the same riwayah with the same ‘an–‘an chain in his Musnad. Shaykh al–Arna’i comments about it this way:

\[ \text{His chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.} \]

Imam al–Tirmidhi (d. 279 H) has equally documented it with Abu Ishaq’s ‘an–‘an narration. Al–Tirmidhi says:

\[ \text{This hadith has a good sahih foreign} \]
This hadith is hasan sahih gharib.8

Interestingly, even ‘Allamah al–Albani accepts its authenticity:

 صحيح

Sahih9

Elsewhere, the ‘Allamah explains his decision:

فنا محمد بن أبي بكر المقدمي ثنا معتمر بن سليمان عن أبيه عن رقبة بن مسقلة عن أبي إسحاق عن سعيد بن جبير
عن ابن عباس عن أبي بن كعب عن النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم قال: الغلام الذي قتله الخضر طبع كافرا.

إسناده صحيح على شرط الشيخين مع ما في النفس من عنغرة أبي إسحاق وهو عمرو ابن عبد الله السبيعي فاني لم
أجد تصريحه بالتحديد في شيء من الروايات عنه مع أنه كان اختلف لكن لعل رقبة بن مسقلة سمعه منه قبل
الاختلاف فإنه قدم الوفاة فقد مات سنة 129 وهي السنة التي مات فيها أبو إسحاق نفسه فهو من أقرانه.


“The boy killed by al-Khidhr was created an unbeliever.”

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs, despite what is in the heart concerning its
‘an–an narration by Abu Ishaq, and his real name was ‘Amr b. ‘Abd Allah al–Sab’i’. I have NOT found
any explicit tadhith (i.e. non–‘an–an transmission) of it by him in the reports, despite that he also
became confused. However, maybe Raqabah b. Masqalah heard it from him before he became
confused because he (Raqabah) died early (in history). His (i.e. Raqabah’s) death was in 129 H, and it
was the year of Abu Ishaq’s death too. Therefore, they both were contemporaries.10

So, the ‘an–an report of Abu Ishaq is accepted as sahih upon the standard of both al–Bukhari and
Muslim by the leading muhadiθun of the Ahl al–Sunnah, including ‘Allamah al–Albani himself. But then,
al–Hafiz (d. 852 H) documents a rather interesting dissenting viewpoint concerning Abu Ishaq’s ‘an–an
reports:

قال شعبة وكان أبو إسحاق إذا أخبرني عن رجل قلت له هذا أكبر منك فإن قال نعم علمت أنه لقي وإن قال أنا أكبر
منه تركته.

Shu’bah said: “Whenever Abu Ishaq narrated to me in an ‘an–an form from any person, I used to say to
him, ‘Is he older than you?’ If he answered, ‘Yes’, then I would know that he met (the narrator) [i.e. there was no *tadlis* in the report]. But, if he said, ‘I am older than him’, I would abandon him.”  

In other words, Shu‘bah assured us that whenever Abu Ishaq transmitted from people older than him, he never did *tadlis*, even if he narrated in an ‘an–‘an manner from them. This is very crucial. Shu‘bah was of an ultra-strict attitude towards Abu Ishaq’s *tadlis*. So, he would not accept even the above *hadith* of the boy, since Sa‘id b. Jubayr was far younger than Abu Ishaq. Yet, despite this, *Hadith al-Tashbih* passes his ultra-strict standards and is covered by his expert assurance. Zayd b. Yathî’ was much older than Abu Ishaq. Al-Hafiz states:

Zayd b. Yathî’.... al–Hamadani al–Kufi: *Thiqah* (trustworthy). **He witnessed both the *Jahiliyyah* and the Islamic era.**

Therefore, Zayd b. Yathî’ was born even before any verse of the Qur’an was revealed! This means that he was even older than a lot of the Sahabah. Meanwhile, al–Hafiz further records this about Abu Ishaq:

Abu Bakr b. ‘Ayyash said: Abu Ishaq died while he was 100 years old or thereabout.  

Since he died in 129 AH, that means he was born in 29 AH. As such, Zayd b. Yathî’ was decades older than him. Based upon the testimony of Shu‘bah, the ‘an–‘an reports of Abu Ishaq from him were, without doubt, free from *tadlis*. But, even if we ignored Shu‘bah’s assurance, *Hadith al–Tashbih* would still pass through, considering the lenient attitude of Sunni *muhadithun* to Abu Ishaq’s patently ‘an–‘an reports generally. With these facts, the first leg of ‘Allamah al–Albani’s criticism against *Hadith al–Tashbih* is cut off from its root completely.

The ‘Allamah further asserts that Yunus heard from his father, Abu Ishaq, only after the latter had become confused due to memory loss. The question is: where is the evidence? There is none! In fact, this submission of our ‘Allamah is more farfetched statement than the other. Yunus was largely contemporaneous with his father. He even met Anas, one of the senior Sahabah! Imam al–Dhahabi (d. 748 H) states about him:

Yunus b. Abi Ishaq ‘Amr b. ‘Abd Allah al–Hamdani al–Sabi’i al–Kufi: **He narrated from Anas ... I say:**

Yunus died in 159 AH, and he was close to 90, if not older.  

So, when Abu Ishaq died in 129 AH, Yunus was already about 60 years old. Does it make sense to claim that such a person narrated from Abu Ishaq only during the latter’s last days when his memory deteriorated?  

He even narrated from Anas who apparently died decades before his father! Al–Hafiz tells us more why ‘Allamah al–Albani’s submission was completely out–of–touch with reality, while writing about Abu Ishaq:

His son (Yunus) narrated from him, as well as his grandson Israil b. Yunus and his other grandson Yusuf b. Ishaq.

If Yunus could not hear any hadith from his father until the latter’s last period on earth, when exactly did the grandsons take from Abu Ishaq? Obviously, Yunus heard hadith from Abu Ishaq long before the latter lost his memory. No wonder, Imam Ibn Khuzaymah has included a chain in which Yunus has narrated ‘an–‘an from Abu Ishaq, who in turn has also transmitted ‘an–‘an from the Sahabi, in his Sahih while Shaykh Dr. al–A’zami further declares that sanad to be sahih.

Shaykh Dr. Asad has equally graded an exactly similar chain as sahih. Meanwhile, Shaykh al–Arnaūt prefers to class an identical sanad only as hasan. Basically, ‘Allamah al–Albani has no valid objection to Hadith al–Tashbih. It has a sahih chain. The narration (including ‘an–‘an) of Yunus from his father, Abu Ishaq, is sahih. Furthermore, the ‘an–‘an transmission of Abu Ishaq from Zayd b. Yathi’ is equally of the perfectly sahih grade, in any circumstance.

Hadith al–Tashbih, as narrated by Abu Dharr, is supported by this shahid documented by Imam ‘Abd al–Razzaq (d. 211 H):


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, when the delegation of (Banu) Thaqif came (to him), said (to them), “You either submit or I appoint a man from me or who is my similarity, and he will hit your necks and take your offspring as war prisoners, and will confiscate your properties.” So, ‘Umar said, “I swear by Allah, I never wished for power except on that day. I volunteered for it, wishing that he would say, “This is the one”. But, he instead looked towards ‘Ali, and held his hand and said, “This is the one.
This is the one.”23

‘Allamah al–Albani comments about this report:

قلت: وهذا إسناد صحيح: ولكنه مرسال.

I say: This chain is sahih. However, it is mursal.24

There is no doubt that this is an effective strengthening shahid for the report of Abu Dharr. So, even if, for the sake of argument, the invalid submissions of ‘Allamah al–Albani concerning Abu Dharr’s hadith are accepted, the above narration of al–Muṭalib nonetheless raises its grade to at least hasan.

5. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al–Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al–Arnaout], vol. 5, p. 118, # 21156
6. Ibid
8. Ibid
12. Sa‘id b. Jubayr was 49 years old when he was murdered by al–Hajjaj in 95 AH. See Shihab al–Din Ahmad b. ‘Ali b. Hajar al–‘Asqalani, Tahdhib al–Tahdhib (Dar al–Fikr; 1st edition, 1404 H), vol. 4, p. 12, # 14. As such, Sa‘id was born in 46 AH, decades after Abu Ishaq.
17. Abu al–‘Arafay was the last of the Ṣahabah to die, and he died in 110 AH. See Ahmad b. ‘Ali b. Hajar al–‘Asqalani, Taqrib al–Tahdhib (Beirut: Dar al–Maktabah al–‘Ilmiyyah; 2nd edition, 1415 H) [annotator: Mustafa ‘Abd al–Qadir ‘Ata], vol. 1, p. 464, # 3122
31. Hadith Al-Tashbih, Instances Of Equality

When the Prophet, sallallahu 'alaihi wa alihi, described Amir al-Muminin, 'alaihi al-salam, as being “exactly like” himself, or his own “similarity”, what was he saying? Was he talking about physical identicalness? Or, was it about tribal affiliations? What was it exactly?

Basically, those statements have deliberately been made general and left open by the Messenger of Allah. As such, everything is the same between them both except whatever has been excluded as exceptions. In other words, the only differences between the Nabi and the Amir are those that have been proved through the Qur’an or authentic hadith. In everything else, they were, and are, the same.

Meanwhile, it would not be inappropriate to cite a few examples of equality between the Messenger of Allah and Imam ‘Ali. ‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H), for instance, records that the Prophet said:

من أحب عليا فقد أحبني ومن أغض عليا فقد أغضني

Whosoever loves ‘Ali has loved me, and whosoever hates ‘Ali has hated me.¹

The ‘Allamah says:

صحيح

Sahih²

In simple terms, the obligations to love the Messenger, and to love Amir al-Muminin, are the same. Love
or hatred of either of them attracts the same recognition, reward or punishment from Allah the Almighty. Interestingly, Imam ‘Ali was not the only one with this status. Imam Abu Ya’la (d. 307 H) further records:

 حدثنا أبو هشام الرفاعي حدثنا ابن فضيل حدثنا سالم بن أبي حفصة عن أبي حازم عن أبي هريرة قال: قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم: من أحب الحسن والحسين فقد أحبني ومن أبغضهما فقد أبغضني.

Abu Hisham al-Rufa’i – Ibn Fudhayl – Salim b. Abi Hafsah – Abu Hazim – Abu Hurayrah:

The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said: “Whosoever loves al-Hasan and al-Husayn has loved me, and whosoever hates them has hated me.”

Shaykh Dr. Asad says:

 إسناده حسن

Its chain is hasan.

Imam Ibn Majah (d. 273 H) has also recorded the hadith through a different ṭariq (route):

 حدثنا علي بن محمد حدثنا وكيعب عن سفيان عن داود بن أبي عوف أبي الجحاف وكان مرضيا عن أبي حازم عن أبي هريرة قال: قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم: من أحب الحسن والحسين فقد أحبني ومن أبغضهما فقد أبغضني.


The Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “Whosoever loves al-Hasan and al-Husayn has loved me, and whosoever hates them has hated me.”

‘Abd al-Baqi states:

 إسناده صحيح، رجاله ثقات

Its chain is sahih. Its narrators are trustworthy.

‘Allamah al-Albani also comments:

 حسن
So, the Prophet, Amir al-Muminin, Imam al-Hasan and Imam al-Husayn, 'alaihim al-salam, were, and are, all equal in terms of love and hatred from any others among the creation. Moreover, their love has been umbilically fused by Allah. Therefore, just as there can never be an excuse – including even ignorance or mistake – for hating the Prophet, there can be none either with regards to any other among them. Their love is one indivisible entity, and so is their hatred.

The significance of the above reports is better reflected in this hadith, copied by ‘Allamah al-Albani:

من أحب عليا فقد أحبني ومن أحبني فقد أحب الله عز وجل ومن أبغض عليا فقد أبغضني ومن أبيضني فقد أبغض الله عز وجل.

Whosoever loves ‘Ali has loved me. And whosoever loves me has loved Allah the Almighty. Moreover, whosoever hates ‘Ali has hated me. And whosoever hates me has hated Allah the Almighty. 8

The ‘Allamah comments:

رواية المختص في "الفوائد المنتفئة" (10 / 5 / 1) بسند صحيح

Al-Mukhlis recorded it in al-Fawaid al-Muntaqat (10/5/1) with a sahih chain from Umm Salamah. 9

In other words:

1. Love of Muhammad is love of Allah, and hatred of Muhammad is hatred of Allah.


5. Love of al-Hasan is love of Allah, and hatred of al-Hasan is hatred of Allah.

7. Love of al-Husayn is love of Allah, and hatred of al-Husayn is hatred of Allah.

So, Amir al-Muminin, Imam al-Hasan and Imam al-Husayn are equal with the Messenger of Allah in terms of the love or hatred of any of them. Our focus at this point, of course, is only Amir al-Muminin.

Another area of equality between the Prophet of Allah and Imam ‘Ali is indicated in this hadith documented by Imam Ahmad (d. 241 H):

حدثنا عبد الله حدثني أبي ثنا يحيى بن أبي بكير قال ثنا إسرائيل عن أبي إسحاق عن أبي عبد الله الجدلي قال دخلت على أم سلمة فقالت لي أني سمعت رسول الله صلى الله عليه و سلم فيكم قيل معاذ الله أو سحاح الله أو كلمة نحوها وقالت سمعت رسول الله صلى الله عليه و سلم يقول من سب عليا فقد سبيني

I entered upon Umm Salamah and she said to me, “Is the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, being cursed among you?” I said, “Allah forbid!” or “Glory to Allah!” or a similar statement. She said, “I heard the Messenger of Allah saying: ‘Whosoever curses ‘Ali has cursed me.’”

Shaykh al-Arnaūṭ comments:

إسناده صحيح

Its chain is sahih.11

Imam al-Haythami (d. 807 H) also states:

رواه أحمد ورجاله رجال الصحيح غير أبي عبد الله الجدلي وهو ثقة

Ahmad recorded it, and its narrators are narrators of the Sahih, apart from Abu ‘Abd Allah al-Jadali and he was trustworthy.12

Imam al-Hakim (d. 403 H) too has this verdict upon the exact same hadith:

هذا حديث صحيح الإسناد

This hadith has a sahih chain13

And Imam al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) agrees with him:

صحيح

Sahih14

It is natural logic, anyway. Cursing is an act of hatred. So, whosoever curses ‘Ali apparently hates him. By that very token, such a person is guilty of hating Allah. Looking further, there is yet another point of equality between the Nabi and the Amir. ‘Allamah al-Albani documents this hadith:

من أذى عليا فقد أذاني
Whosoever hurts ‘Ali has hurt me.  

The ‘Allamah states:

 صحیح

Sahih

Imam al-Hakim also comments:

هذا حديث صحيح الإسناد

This hadith has a sahih chain.

Imam al-Dhahabi affirms the verdict:

 صحیح

Sahih

Imam al-Haythami also declares about this hadith:

رواه أحمد ... ورجال أحمد ثقات

Ahmad recorded ... and the narrators of Ahmad are trustworthy.

In Islam, to hurt someone means to do anything that causes physical or emotional discomfort to them. For example, notice what Allah has said here:

والفتان يأتياها منكم فاذوهما

And the two persons among you who commit it (i.e. fornication), hurt them both.

This is clearly about physical hurt. Let us compare that with this noble verse:

يا أبيا الذين أمنوا لا تكونوا كالذين أمنوا موسي فيرأه الله مما قالوا وكان عند الله وجيبها

O you who believe! Do not be like those who hurt Musa, but Allah cleared him of that which they said,
and he was honourable before Allah.\textsuperscript{21}

They made incorrect statements about Musa, \textit{‘alaihi al-salam}. Such statements apparently hurt the feelings and image of this noble prophet. Therefore, to Allah, they had thereby hurt him. Another example is given in this \textit{hadith} documented by Imam al-Hakim:

A Syrian man came and cursed ‘Ali in the presence of Ibn ‘Abbas. So, Ibn ‘Abbas threw pebbles at him and said, “O enemy of Allah! You have hurt the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. Verily, those who hurt Allah and His Messenger, Allah has cursed them in this world, and in the Hereafter, and has prepared for them a humiliating torment. If the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, had been alive, you would have hurt him.”\textsuperscript{22}

Al-Hakim declares:

This \textit{hadith} has a \textit{sahih} chain.\textsuperscript{23}

Imam al-Dhahabi also states:

\textit{Sahih}\textsuperscript{24}

There is a lot of \textit{fawaid} in this \textit{hadith}. Some of them are listed below:

2. Whoever hurts ‘Ali is an enemy of Allah.
3. Whoever hurts ‘Ali falls under Qur’an 33:57
7. ‘Ali b. Abi Talib does not need to be physically present before the hurt is done. As long as the act would have hurt him had he been present or would have hurt his name, the crime is completed.


11. Therefore, whoever hurts ‘Ali has hurt Allah and His Messenger.

There is no doubt that if Amir al-Muminin had been physically present when the Syrian man was cursing him, his feelings would have been hurt. Since whatever hurts ‘Ali also hurts the Prophet, it is then the case that the feelings of the latter too would have been hurt. This is what matters in the Sight of Allah. Would the feelings of ‘Ali have been hurt if he were present? If the answer were positive, then indeed the treason is committed.

Ibn ‘Abbas, radhiyallahu ‘anhu, quoted this verse as applying to all cases where ‘Ali has been hurt:

 إن الذين يؤذون الله ورسوله لعنهم الله في الدنيا والآخرة وأعده لهم عذابا مهينا

Verily, those who hurt Allah and His Messenger, Allah has cursed them in this world, and in the Hereafter, and has prepared for them a humiliating torment. 

This is the case with ‘Ali. Whoever hurts the Prophet has hurt Allah. Therefore, Allah will curse such a person in both this world and the next, and will throw him into Hellfire. The same is exactly the case with ‘Ali. Whosoever hurts Amir al-Muminin has hurt Allah too. As such, the same punishments that apply in the case of the Messenger also apply in the case of the Amir.

By contrast, if any believer – other than ‘Ali – had been hurt, the applicable laws are different! Our Creator states:

والذين يؤذون المؤمنين والمؤمنات بغير ما اكتسبوا فقد احتملوا بهتانا وإنما مبينا

And those who hurt the believing men and women undeservedly bear on themselves the crime of slander and plain sin.

This verse proves the absolute superiority of Amir al-Muminin over the entire Ummah. If any Muslim is hurt – whether physically or emotionally – the first question to ask is: did he deserve the hurt? In other words, there are cases when the body or feelings of a believer can be deservedly hurt. In such cases, there is no retribution against the person causing the hurt. Even then, where the hurt was undeserved, the offender is only guilty of slander and sin. Therefore, the punishment is different from what is applicable in the cases of the Messenger of Allah and Amir al-Muminin. Allah has conjoined hurt of Himself with hurt of His Messenger with waw al-musharakah – the conjunction of partnership. In other
words, whatsoever applies for Allah, in any case that He is hurt, also applies for His Messenger in any similar circumstance. So, since Allah never deserves to be hurt, then His Messenger too is of the same status. By extension, Amir al-Muminin as well can never be justifiably hurt. Allah has protected both the Nabi and the Amir from ever deserving to be hurt, either physically or emotionally.

2. Ibid
4. Ibid
5. Ibn Majah Abu ‘Abd Allah Muhammad b. Yazid al-Qazwini, Sunan (Dar al-Fikr) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad ‘Abd al-Baqi], vol. 1, p. 51, # 143
6. Ibid
10. Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al-Arna‘ut], vol. 6, p. 323, # 26791
11. Ibid
13. Ibid
18. Ibid
20. Qur’an 4:16
21. Qur’an 33:69
23. Ibid
24. Ibid
25. Qur’an 33:57
26. Qur’an 33:58
32. Hadith Al-Ikhtiyar, Examining The Verse Of The Cave

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728 H) states:

Allah says: {If you help him not, for Allah did indeed help him when the disbelievers drove him out, the second of two, when they both were in the cave, when he was saying to his companion: “Do not fear, surely Allah is with us.”} (9:40)

This merit never reached absolutely anyone other than Abu Bakr ... And superiority is established only through exclusive merits, and not through shared qualities ... The scholars have said: “What has been authentically transmitted among the merits of ‘Ali are only shared qualities, which others too share with him, as opposed to al-Siddiq, for lots of his merits and most of them are exclusive to him, and not shared with him by anyone.”

In other words, the above verse establishes the superiority of Abu Bakr over all the Sahabah. It contains his exclusive merit. Our Shaykh says further:

So, it is said that there is no doubt that the merit achieved by Abu Bakr during the Hijrah, none other of the Sahabah achieved it, in accordance with the Book, the Sunnah and the consensus (of the Sunni scholars). Therefore, this superiority becomes established for him, and not for ‘Umar, ‘Uthman, ‘Ali or other Sahabah. As such, he was the Imam.

Our Shaykh’s line of argument goes like this:

1. Whichever of the Sahabah had a merit which none other possessed was the best of them.
3. Such a Sahabi was also the true Imam among them.

In line with this reasoning, he argues – citing unnamed Sunni scholars as support – that most of Abu Bakr’s “merits” were exclusive to him, and none of Amir al-Muminin’s merits was exclusive to him! This is very strange though. Throughout this book of ours, we have investigated only authentic _ahadith_ on exclusive merits of ‘Ali, ‘alaihi al-salam, in the most authoritative Sunni sources! Our esteemed readers can themselves verify this. Moreover, Imam al-Nasai (d. 303 H) authored a well–known book – _Khasais Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali_ (The Exclusive Merits of Amir al–Muminin ‘Ali) – in which he compiled only Sunni _ahadith_ on the exclusive merits of Imam ‘Ali! No similar book has ever been written for Abu Bakr, ‘Umar or ‘Uthman.

Anyway, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah thinks that the Verse of the Cave above contains an exclusive merit of Abu Bakr, which establishes his overall superiority and _Imamah_ over the Sahabah. In our view – as we will prove – the verse actually does the direct opposite! It basically exposes Abu Bakr and all the Sunni-only “_ahadith_” about him in very uncomfortable lights. It also totally brings down the Sunni creed, leaving it no chance of revival!

We will begin our analysis by looking first at the full text of the verse:

> If you help him not, for Allah did indeed help him when the disbelievers drove him out – the second of two _when_ they both were in the cave – when he was saying to his companion: “Do not fear, surely Allah is with us.” So, Allah sent down His _sakinah_ upon him, and helped him with forces which you saw not, and made the word of those who disbelieved the lowermost, while it was the Word of Allah that became the uppermost, and Allah is All–Mighty, All–Wise.3

The verse is primarily about the Messenger of Allah, _sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi_. The following points can be deduced from it:

1. The disbelievers drove him out of Makkah. So, he was ordered to migrate to Madinah by Allah.

3. He was the second of two people, _when_ they both were together in the cave.

5. Abu Bakr was the first of the two, as he was the only one present with him in the cave. He has also been called the Prophet’s companion.

7. Abu Bakr exhibited fear. So, the Messenger ordered him not to fear. The meaning of the phrase “Allah is with us” will be discussed in detail soon.
9. Allah ignored Abu Bakr, and sent down His sakinah upon His Prophet alone, and further helped him alone with unseen forces.

11. Through these actions, Allah made the plan of the disbelievers to fail, and His Own Plan to succeed. Particular attention must be paid to this part:

If you help him not, for Allah did indeed help him when the disbelievers drove him out – the second of two when they both were in the cave – and he was saying to his companion.

The expression “the second of two” is a description of the one who was driven out by the disbelievers and helped by Allah. He was the second of two people in the cave, and it was he who said what he said to his companion. This is so obvious from the text of the verse. Meanwhile, Prof. Ibn Yasin, a contemporary Sunni mufassir, also states in support of our proposition under the verse:

Al-Tabari records with his sahih chain from Mujahid that he said: “(If you help him not) He mentioned what was his affair since He appointed him (on a prophetic mission). Allah says: I do that with Him and I am his Helper, and I helped him when he was like that, and he was the second of two.4

In very simple terms, the Messenger of Allah was the second of two as we have stated. Abu Bakr was the first. Getting this part of the verse straight is extremely crucial to our discussion. This is because the alleged “exclusive merit” of Abu Bakr in it is only a widespread Sunni misconception that he was the one referred to as “the second of two”? For instance, Imam al-Bukhari (d. 256 H) records:

 حدثنا إبراهيم بن موسى أخبرنا هشام عن معمر عن الزهري

أخبرني أنس بن مالك رضي الله عنه أنه سمع خطبة عمر الآخرة حين جلس على المنبر وذلك الغد من يوم توفي النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم فشهد وأبو بكر صامع طالب قال كنت أرجو أن يعيش رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم حتى يديري برئان ذلك أن يكون آخرهم فإن يك محمد صلى الله عليه وسلم قد مات فإن الله تعالى قد جعل بين أظهركم نورا تهديونه بما هدى الله محمد صلى الله عليه وسلم وإن أبا بكر صاحب رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم تفتوها عنهم لأنه أوائلي ثمين فإنه أولى المسلمين بأمركم فقوموا يا بابوهوه وكانت طالفة منهم قد بايدهوه قبل ذلك في صفية بني ساعدة وكانت بيعة العامة على المنبر.
I heard 'Umar's second sermon which he delivered while he was sitting on the pulpit on the day following the death of the Prophet, peace be upon him. He testified while Abu Bakr was silent and did not say anything. He ('Umar) said, “I wish that the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, had outlived all of us. But if Muhammad is dead, Allah nonetheless has kept a light amongst you from which you can receive the same guidance as Allah guided Muhammad, peace be upon him, with that. And Abu Bakr is the companion of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him. He is (also) the second of two. He is the most entitled person among the Muslims to manage your affairs. Therefore get up and swear allegiance to him.”

Imam 'Abd al-Razzaq (d. 211 H) has recorded the same report with the same chain:

Commenting on these reports, al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) states:

His statement (Abu Bakr is the companion of the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, etc): Ibn al-Tin said: “He mentioned the companionship first due to its honour. However, since others shared it with him (i.e. Abu Bakr), he ('Umar) conjoined it with what was exclusive to Abu Bakr, and that was his being the second of two, and it is the greatest of his merits which entitled him to be the khilifah after the Prophet, peace be upon him. This was why he ('Umar) said: “He is the most entitled person among mankind to manage your affairs”.
It is apparent that the Ahl al-Sunnah, based upon the submissions of ‘Umar and others, consider Abu Bakr to have been the one referred to by Allah as “the second of two” in this verse:

إِلاَّ تَنْصِرُوهُ فَإِذْ نَصَرَهُ اللَّهُ إِذْ أَخْرَجَهُ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا ثَانِيَ اثْنَيْنِ إِذَا هُمُ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا إِذْ هُمُ الفِرَّاءُ إِذْ يُقُولُ لِصَاحِبِهِ لَا تَحْزَنَّ إِنَّ اللَّهَ مَعَنَا فَأنْزَلَ اللَّهُ سَكِينَتَهُ عَلَيْهِ وَأَيْدِيهِ بِجَنُودٍ لَّمْ تَرَوهُا

If you help him not, for Allah did indeed help him when the disbelievers drove him out – the second of two when they both were in the cave – when he was saying to his companion: “Do not fear, surely Allah is with us.” So, Allah sent down His sakinah upon him, and helped him with forces which you saw not.

If the Sunni theory were correct, then the following would be true:

1. Allah helped Abu Bakr when the disbelievers drove him out. Allah did not help His Messenger.

3. It was Abu Bakr who said to the Prophet “Do not fear, surely Allah is with us”. The Messenger was the “companion” of Abu Bakr.

5. Allah sent down sakinah upon Abu Bakr and helped him with unseen forces. He did not send sakinah upon His Prophet and did not strengthen him with any forces.

Would a believer ever make any of the above submissions? This is the grand Sunni dilemma!

The patent Sunni logic is this:

1. Abu Bakr was the second of two in the cave with the Messenger.

3. Therefore, he was second in rank only to the Prophet.

The truth, however, is that Abu Bakr was actually the first of two, while the Messenger of Allah was the second! By the Sunni logic, the Prophet was in reality second in rank to Abu Bakr!

Well, let us agree, for the sake of argument, that Abu Bakr was the one referred to as “the second of two” in the Verse of the Cave. In that case, the Messenger was the first of two. By Sunni logic, Abu Bakr then is the second highest ranking Muslim in this Ummah, after the Prophet, due to his status in that verse. In other words, the first of two is the first in the Ummah; and the second of two is the second in the Ummah. But, does this arrangement really help the Ahl al-Sunnah? The best way to find out is through this hadith recorded by Imam al-Bukhari:

 حدثنا محمد بن سنان حدثنا ثابت عن أنس عن أبي بكر رضي الله عنه قال: قلنا للنبي صلى الله عليه وسلم وأنا في الغار: لو أن أحدكم نظر تحت قدميه لأبصرنا فقال ما ظلك يا أبي بكر بائنين لله ناللهما
Muhammad b. Sinan – Hamam – Thabit – Anas – Abu Bakr, may Allah be pleased with him:

I said to the Prophet, peace be upon him, while I was in the cave, “If any of them should look under his feet, he would see us.” He said, "O Abu Bakr! What do you think of two, the third of whom is Allah?"  

So, the Messenger is first of three, Abu Bakr the second, and Allah the third. By Sunni logic therefore, Abu Bakr is superior to Allah?! May Allah forgive us and save us from such blasphemies. The above question of the Prophet was picked from this verse:

َوَنَمَنْ نَجَوْى٣٠٣ إِلَّآ هُوَ رَابِعُهُمْ وَلَا خَمْسَة٣٠٤ إِلَّآ هُوَ سَادِسُهُمْ

Have you not seen that Allah knows whatsoever is in the heavens and whatsoever is on the earth? There is no private conversation of three, except He is their fourth, nor five except He is their sixth, nor of less than that or more, except He is with them wherever they may be.

Let us connect everything now. First, we have the verse:

إِذْ يَقُولُ لِصَاحِبِهِ لَا تَحْزَنِ أَنِّي أَكُلُّمَ، إِنَّهُ مُعَنَّا

When he was saying to his companion: “Do not fear, surely Allah is WITH US.”

Then the hadith:

فَنَفَسَ مَا ذَلِكَ يَا أَبَا بُكْرَ بَانِيَنَّ للهِ نَالِئِيْنَأْمَا

He said, “O Abu Bakr! What do you think of two, the third of whom is Allah?”

Both sentences are then connected by Allah Himself:

َوَنَمَنْ نَجَوْى٣٠٣ إِلَّآ هُوَ رَابِعُهُمْ وَلَا خَمْسَة٣٠٤ إِلَّآ هُوَ سَادِسُهُمْ

There is no private conversation of three, except He is their fourth, nor five except He is their sixth, nor of less than that or more, except He is WITH THEM wherever they may be.

It is obvious. Allah was with His Prophet and Abu Bakr, only in the sense that He was present with them both in the cave. He was with them solely on account of His being their third. However, this was no merit at all, much less an exclusive achievement! Allah is similarly present with every single individual, or any
number of individuals, staying secretly anywhere. As such, He is present with even pagans and criminals whenever they plot their disbelief and evil deeds!

Here, we get to the most serious aspect of the Verse of the Cave. The first undeniable fact, at this stage, is that Allah ignored Abu Bakr and did not help him, even though there were two of them together in the cave:

If you help him not, for Allah did indeed help him when the disbelievers drove him out – the second of two when they both were in the cave.

We ask: why? Allah has made a promise in His Book:

O you who believe! If you help Allah, He will help you.\(^\text{11}\)

So, was Abu Bakr a believer? Was he helping the Cause of Allah with his Hijrah? If the answers to both questions were “yes”, then why did Allah refuse to help him? Or, is it that Abu Bakr actually needed no help? In that case, why was he hiding with the Prophet in the cave? The fact that Allah ignored Abu Bakr and did not help him raises red flags concerning his iman and his real intentions with his migration.

Allah provided two kinds of help in the cave:

So, Allah sent down His sakinah upon him, and helped him with forces which you saw not.

Al-Hafiz Ibn Kathir (d. 774 H) comments:

{So, Allah sent down His sakinah upon him}: meaning, (He sent down) His assistance and help upon him, that his, upon the Messenger according to the more popular of two views ... This is why He said: {and helped him with forces which you saw not}, that is, the angels.\(^\text{12}\)

When this verse was revealed – about ten years after the incident – some (if not all) of the disbelievers who wanted to kill the Prophet that day had become Muslims. So, the phrase “which you saw not” was apparently directed at them. Allah sent His sakinah upon His Messenger, and further helped him with unseen forces, namely the angels. Abu Bakr was ignored. The foundational fact to note about sakinah is
He it is **Who sent down sakinah** into the hearts of the believers, that they may grow more in faith (iman) along with their (present) faith (iman).\(^{13}\)

The following points are clear from the verse:

1. **Sakinah** is revealed into the heart.

3. It only strengthens the already existing iman (faith) in the heart.

5. As such, it never enters a heart with no iman (faith), since there would be nothing for it to strengthen.

In particular, before Allah sends down sakinah to any heart, He first looks at what is inside it to find iman:

\[
\text{Indeed, Allah was pleased with the believers when they gave their ba'yah to you (O Muhammad) under the tree. He knew what was in their hearts. Therefore, He sent down sakinah upon them.}^{14}\]

The question is: why did Allah send down sakinah into the heart of His Prophet alone, despite the presence of Abu Bakr with him? In similar cases, He had equally revealed it to whichever believer was with him:

So, Allah sent down His sakinah upon His Messenger and upon the believers.\(^{15}\)

And:

Then Allah sent down His sakinah upon His Messenger and upon the believers, and sent down forces which you saw not.\(^{16}\)

So, why did He exclude Abu Bakr in the cave? It is obvious that He checked the latter’s heart, alongside that of His Prophet. Then, He decided to send His sakinah to His Messenger only. We again ask our
Sunni brothers: why? According to the Ahl al-Sunnah, Abu Bakr was the sayyid of believers. If that were true, then his iman would be the greatest among the Sahabah. In that case, Allah would certainly have blessed him with His sakinah as He did with His Messenger. But, He did not! We ask once more: why would Allah refuse to send sakinah into a heart filled with strong, undiluted iman? Looking at everything, the only logical explanation is that Allah looked at the heart of Abu Bakr and found no iman there. Therefore, He decided to send down His sakinah upon His Prophet alone.

Expectedly, Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah feels severely troubled by this conclusion:

As for the statement of the Rafidhi that “the Qur’an, whenever it mentions the descent of sakinah upon the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, always conjoined the believers with him, except in this one place (i.e. in the cave), and there is no disgrace worse than it.”

The first answer is that this one (i.e. the Rafidhi) hallucinates that it (i.e. the Qur’an) mentions that (i.e. the descent of sakinah upon the Prophet and the believers together) as having occurred at several places. But this is not so. Rather, it has not mentioned that except in the story of Hunayn... It has (also) mentioned the descent of sakinah upon the believers and the Messenger was not included with them in His Statement {Verily, We have given you [O Muhammad] a manifest victory} (48:1) until His Statement {He it is Who sent down sakinah into the hearts of the believers} (48:4) and His Statement {Indeed, Allah was pleased with the believers when they gave their ba’yah to you [O Muhammad] under the tree. He knew what was in their hearts, and He sent down sakinah upon them} (48:18).17

First and foremost, the Rafidhi did not claim that sakinah was revealed upon the Prophet and the believers together at several places. His statement is very clear:

As for the statement of the Rafidhi that “the Qur’an, whenever it mentions the descent of sakinah upon the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, always conjoined the believers with him, except
in this one place (i.e. in the cave), and there is no disgrace worse than it.

To refute him, our Shaykh only has to show us a single place in the Qur’an where Allah has revealed His sakinah upon His Prophet alone, without joining the believers with him. The truth is: the Rafidhi was correct! The only instance where sakinah descended upon the Messenger alone was during his stay in the cave with Abu Bakr. That indeed is a severe slur on the latter.

Secondly, our Shaykh’s claim that sakinah descended upon the Prophet and the believers together only at Hunayn (8 H), and at no other place, is equally untrue! The same thing occurred at al–Hudaybiyyah (6 H) too:

When those who disbelieve had put in their hearts pride and haughtiness, the pride and haughtiness of Jahiliyyah, then Allah sent down His sakinah upon His Messenger and upon the believers, and made them stick to the Word of Piety, and they were well entitled to it and worthy of it. And Allah is the All-Knower of everything. Indeed Allah shall fulfil the true vision which He showed to His Messenger. Certainly you shall enter the Masjid al-Haram (in Makkah), insha Allah, secure, (some) having your heads shaved, and (some) having your hair cut short, having no fear. He knew what you knew not, and He granted besides that a near victory.\(^ {18} \)

This was two years before Hunayn, when the unbelievers – who were still in control of Makkah – arrogantly prevented the Messenger and the believers from performing Hajj there. Instead, the Muslims, headed by the Prophet, entered into a peace agreement with the pagan Makkans, granting the latter lots of concessions. Allah then promised the believers of a near conquest of Makkah. It happened soon thereafter, in a bloodless manner.

In the light of the above fact, the fallacy of this submission of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah also comes to the fore:

It has (also) mentioned the descent of sakinah upon the believers and the Messenger was not included with them in His Statement {Verily, We have given you [O Muhammad] a manifest victory} (48:1) until His Statement {He it is Who sent down sakinah into the hearts of the believers} (48:4) and His
Statement {Indeed, Allah was pleased with the believers when they gave their ba’yah to you [O Muhammad] under the tree. He knew what was in their hearts, and He sent down sakinah upon them} (48:18)

All of those verses were revealed about al-Hudaybiyyah! Allah mentions His revelation of sakinah, on that occasion, upon His Prophet only once, and mentions its descent upon the believers on the same occasion thrice – all of them in the same Surah which was specifically sent down about that singular event. Yet, the bottomline remains that the sakinah came upon the Messenger and the believers together at Hudaybiyyah!

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s lowly attempt to wreck the verses out of context and to impose a misleading tag upon them does not augur well for his image as a scholar. The truth remains: whenever sakinah descended upon the Prophet, it always also descended upon all believers with him, excluding only the hypocrites and the pagans. Moreover, Allah never excluded His Messenger from His sakinah while sending it upon the believers present with him.

This takes us back to the beginning. Why did Allah exclude Abu Bakr from His sakinah, even though he was with His Prophet?

Having failed woefully in his “first answer”, our Shaykh attempts a second:

It is said, secondly: people disagree on exactly who was intended with His statement {So Allah sent down His sakinah upon him) in Surah al-Tawbah (9), verse 40 [i.e. the Verse of the Cave]. Some of them say that it refers to the Prophet, peace be upon him, and some of them say it refers to Abu Bakr, because he was the last mentioned character before the statement, and because he needed the descent of sakinah. Therefore, He sent down sakinah upon him as He sent it down upon the believers who gave the ba’yah under the tree. And the Prophet, peace be upon him, did not need it in this condition, due to his perfect calm, as opposed to its descent on the Day of Hunayn, for he was then (i.e. at Hunayn) in need of it due to the flight of the majority of his Sahabah (from the battlefield), and the approach of the enemy troops, and his drive with his female mule towards the enemy troops.19

This one is even far worse! To begin with, suggesting that the sakinah descended upon Abu Bakr in the Verse of the Cave, and not the Prophet, is high blasphemy. Let us have a renewed look at the verse:
If you help him not, for Allah did indeed help him when the disbelievers drove him out – the second of two when they both were in the cave – when he was saying to his companion: “Do not fear, surely Allah is with us.” So, Allah sent down His sakinah upon him, and helped him with forces which you saw not.

For Allah’s sake, why would He help Abu Bakr with angels, at the expense of His Messenger?! Besides, is the verse not clear enough about who was helped? The world is strange, indeed. The context of the verse has perfectly removed any need for any grammatical acrobatics in understanding its meaning. What our Shaykh suggests only applies where there is ambiguity in the statement. There is none here. Anyway, as stated by al–Hafiz Ibn Kathir, the majority of Sunni scholars agree with the apparent teaching of the verse:

{So, Allah sent down His sakinah upon him}: meaning, (He sent down) His assistance and help upon him, that his, upon the Messenger according to the more popular of two views.\(^{20}\)

Our Shaykh also suggests that sakinah is revealed to remove fear and restore calm, a submission completely contradictory to the Qur’an:

He it is Who sent down sakinah into the hearts of the believers, THAT THEY MAY GROW MORE IN FAITH (IMAN) along with their (present) faith (iman).\(^{21}\)

It is not about fear. It is about iman. Since growth in iman is needed in both periods of calm and unrest, then the foundation of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah’s second “answer” collapses at this point. Besides, the Messenger of Allah was perfectly calm at al–Hudaybiyyah, as our Shaykh himself confesses. Yet, Allah sent down His sakinah upon him. Interestingly, the believers were also calm then, and He still sent down His sakinah upon them! Where has our Shaykh got his idea that the Prophet did not need sakinah at al–Hudaybiyyah or in the cave? Is he accusing Allah of doing needless things, by sending down His sakinah upon His Messenger when the latter did not need it? This reveals the extent to which some people can go to blaspheme Allah and His Prophet just to uplift Abu Bakr!

Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah now moves to his final “answer”: 
It is said upon this: when he said to his companion, “Allah is with us”, the Prophet, peace be upon him, was the leader while Abu Bakr was the follower and was his companion, and Allah was with them both. So when sakina and help got to the leader in this circumstance, it also got to the follower in the same circumstance. This is because he was a companion and a sticking follower, and there was no need here to mention Abu Bakr here, due to the perfect connection and companionship, which necessitated his benefitting in the help along with the Prophet, peace be upon him.  

Put in clearer words, Abu Bakr was a necessary beneficiary of Allah’s Help to His Messenger. So, the Qur’an sees no need to mention the former’s name again. Well, it might truly be said that Abu Bakr also benefitted from Allah’s provision of security to His Prophet. However, the same cannot be said about His sakina, which has to do only with the growth of iman in the heart:  

He it is Who sent down sakina into the hearts of the believers, THAT THEY MAY GROW MORE IN FAITH (iman) along with their (present) faith (iman).  

It would be very illogical to claim that a growth in iman by the Messenger of Allah somehow also means a similar situation for Abu Bakr. This is why, at al-Hudaybiyyah, despite that the believers among the Sahabah present there were also “companions” and “sticking followers” of the Prophet, Allah still saw the need to separately send down sakina upon them:  

So, Allah sent down His sakina upon His Messenger and upon the believers.  

Interestingly, the believing Sahabah at al-Hudaybiyyah – along with the Prophet – were in perfect calm, and not in fear. Nonetheless, Allah revealed His sakina upon them. This further debunks the notion of Shaykh Ibn Taymiyyah that sakina is sent down only to remove fears in precarious situations. How would he explain what Allah did at al-Hudaybiyyah? On the other hand, Abu Bakr displayed demeaning levels of fear in the cave:
When he was saying to his companion: “**Do not fear**, surely Allah is with us.”

He did not say it once! He was **repeatedly** saying it to him. The meaning would have been different if Allah had said “while he was saying....” or “when he said.... ”. Abu Bakr, apparently, did not have sufficient belief in the words of the Messenger of Allah. This was why he did not calm down even though the Prophet had assured him of Allah’s Presence. Allah was certainly aware of their situation, and would surely help them both if He found **iman** and sincerity in their hearts. But, even after repeated assurances by the Messenger of Allah, Abu Bakr was still in fear.

What exactly did he doubt? The presence of Allah with them? The existence of Allah? The **nubuwwah** of Muhammad? His own **iman** and sincerity? Is there really any justification for Abu Bakr’s failure to believe the Prophet? That was thirteen years after he supposedly accepted Islam! Since he was like that after so many years, what guarantees were there that he became better during the ten, more prosperous and more politicized years of the Madinan era? How could he even have doubted at all a single letter uttered by the Messenger if he really was a believer? No wonder, when Allah looked into Abu Bakr’s heart during his stay in the cave, He refused to send down His **sakinah** upon him.

In the cave, the Messenger of Allah, sallallahu ‘alaihi wa alihi, repeatedly assured Abu Bakr of Allah’s Presence. But it did not work:

اذ يقول لصاحبه لا تحزن إن الله معنا

When he was saying to his companion: “Do not fear, surely Allah is with us.”

Al-Hafiz Ibn Kathir (d. 774 H) comments about this verse:

During the year of the Hijrah, the pagans tried to kill, imprison or expel him (i.e the Prophet). So, he escaped with his friend and companion, Abu Bakr b. Abi Quhafah, to the Thawr Cave. They remained there for three days. So the scouts who were sent in their pursuit returned, and they proceeded to Madinah. (While in the cave), Abu Bakr, may Allah be pleased with him, was afraid that they might be discovered by someone, that some harm might come to the Messenger, peace be upon him, from them.

Therefore, the Prophet, peace be upon him, kept reassuring him and strengthening his resolve, saying, “O Abu Bakr! What do you think of two, the third of whom is Allah?” 1

Apparently, one word was not enough for Abu Bakr. When the Prophet mentioned the presence of Allah the first time, he obviously noticed that his companion was not convinced. So, he kept repeating it, telling him not to fear. The Sunni argument is that Abu Bakr only had great, uncontrollable fears for the life and
safety of the Messenger of Allah. Well, there is nothing in the verse or hadith remotely suggesting that.

By contrast, the words of the Prophet, “Allah is with us”, suggest that Abu Bakr’s fears were about both of them together in the cave. Otherwise, he would have said, “Allah is with me”, placing the emphasis upon himself. Abu Bakr’s fears about the Prophet could also have actually been self-serving! Their fates were interconnected in that dire situation. If the Messenger fell into any danger, Abu Bakr was sure to have a good taste of it too. So, he wanted the Prophet safe, so that he too could be safe.

What support our contention – that Abu Bakr did not really care about the Prophet’s life – are his latter actions on the battlefields. For instance, he abandoned the Messenger of Allah to the mercy of the pagans on different days of battle, and fled away, again and again, with his life from jihad. Imam Muslim (d. 261 H) records:


“None remained with the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, on some of the days in which the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, was fighting apart from Talhah and Sa’d. They both (i.e. Talhah and Sa’d) narrated that to me.”

On several expeditions of the Prophet, Abu Bakr, ‘Umar and ‘Uthman fled and escaped from battle! They ran way, and did not look back, knowing fully well that their actions could get the Prophet killed, injured or imprisoned.

In any case, what matters to our discussion in this chapter is that Abu Bakr doubted the assurances of the Messenger of Allah while they both were in danger, in the cave. He was unconvinced by them. Therefore, when Allah sent down His sakinah, He excluded him. The same thing happened with ‘Umar later on the Day of al-Hudaybiyyah. Imam Ibn Hibban (d. 354 H) records his own words concerning what he did on that day:

So, ‘Umar b. al-Khaṭṭab, may Allah be pleased with him, said (about the Day of al-Hudaybiyyah): “By Allah! I never doubted since I accepted Islam EXCEPT on that day. So, I went to the Prophet, peace be upon him, and said, ‘Are you not truly the Messenger of Allah?’”
‘Allamah al-Albani (d. 1420 H) comments:

 صحيح

Sahih

Moreover, Shaykh al-Arnauṭ agrees:

حديث صحيح

It is a sahih hadith

He doubted the nubuwwah of Muhammad on that day! This removed him from the ranks of believers. So, when Allah sent down His sakinah, He excluded ‘Umar, and whoever was like him:

فأنزل الله سكينته على رسوله وعلى المؤمنين

So, Allah sent down His sakinah upon His Messenger and upon the believers.

And:

لقد رضي الله عن المؤمنين إذ بياعونك تحت الشجرة فعلم ما في قلوبهم فأنزل السكينة عليهم

He knew what was in their hearts. Therefore, He sent down sakinah upon them.

At this point, it is apposite to quote this verse:

إنهما المؤمنون الذين آمنوا بالله ورسوله ثم لم يربوا ووجهوا بأموالهم وأنفسهم في سبيل الله أولئك هم الصادقو

The believers are only those who have believed in Allah and His Messenger, and do not doubt afterwards, and they do jihad with their wealth and with their lives, for the Cause of Allah. They are the truthful ones.

Did Abu Bakr and ‘Umar ever doubt Allah or His Messenger after they had accepted Islam? Did Abu Bakr and ‘Umar ever shield their lives from jihad by running away? Were they true believers then? Can people like them really be the best ones in this Ummah after our Prophet? What about those of the Sahabah, like Imam ‘Ali, ‘alaihi al-salam, and perhaps others, who never doubted after their acceptance of Islam, and who never fled the battlefield? How could they have been inferior?
How can a doubter be superior to a firm, unshakable believer? How can someone who escapes with his life from jihad be better than someone who completely sold his life to Allah? How can someone who abandoned the Messenger of Allah in fatal danger and ran to save his own life be more valuable than another who placed his life in the midst of pagan swords so that the Prophet could live?

Most importantly, the Messenger also specifically named the second best of the entirety of this Ummah – during his lifetime – after himself. It is in Hadith al-Ikhtiyar, recorded by Imam al-Tabarani (d. 360 H):

When the Prophet, peace be upon him, married Faṭimah to ‘Ali, Faṭimah said, “O Messenger of Allah! You are marrying me to a poor man who has nothing.” So, the Messenger of Allah, peace be upon him, said, “Are you not pleased, O Faṭimah, that Allah the Almighty the Most Glorious chose, from the people of the earth, two men: one of them is your father and the other is your husband?”

Concerning the First Narrator B, ‘Allamah al-Albani states:

Al-Hasan b. ‘Ali al-Ma’mari: He is saduq (very truthful), a hafiz (hadith scientist).

Al-Hafiz (d. 852 H) says something similar:


And Imam al-Dhahabi (d. 748 H) corroborates them:
Al-Ma’mari: the Imam, the hafiz (hadith scientist), the generous, the pious, the hadith master of ‘Iraq, Abu ‘Ali al–Hasan b. ‘Ali b. Shabib al–Baghdadi al–Ma’mari.  

Imam al–Hakim (d. 403 H) has equally documented his chain in his Mustadrak:

أبو سعيد أحمد بن يعقوب النقيب ثنا الحسن بن علي المعمر ثنا أبو مصعب الزهرى ثنا هشام بن عمار


Al–Hakim says about the chain:

هذا حديث صحيح الإسناد

This hadith has a sahih chain. 14

And al–Dhahabi corroborates him:

صحيح

Sahih 15

This proves that al–Ma’mari was thiqah (trustworthy).

Al–Hafiz also states about the second narrator:

عبد الرزاق بن همام بن نافع الحميري مولاهم أبو بكر الصنعاني ثقة حافظ


He further says about the third narrator:

معمر بن راشد الأزدي مولاهم أبو عروة البصري نزل اليمن ثقة نبت فاضل

Ma’mar b. Rashid al–Azdi, their freed slave, Abu ‘Urwah al–Basri, he lived in Yemen: Thiqah (trustworthy), thabt (accurate), fadhil (meritorious). 17
The fourth narrator is like him, as confirmed by Imam al–Dhahabi:

‘Abd Allah b. Abi Najih al–Makki: the scholar of tafsir. He learnt from Mujahid and ‘A(bya and was one of the thiqah (trustworthy) Imams. 18

Al–Hafiz adds:

‘Abd Allah b. Abi Najih Yasar al–Makki, Abu Yasar al–Thaqafi, their freed slave: Thiqah (trustworthy), accused of believing in fatalism, and maybe he practised tadlis. 19

There is a probability that he practised tadlis. It is not definite. In any case, his ‘an–‘an reports from Mujahid are accepted as sahih. For instance, Imam Muslim records this chain in his Sahih:


Imam Ahmad b. Hanbal (d. 241 H) also records:


And Shaykh al–Arnanu comments:

Its chain is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs. 22

Imam al–Hakim is not left out:

Al–Hakim states:

هذا حديث صحيح على شرط الشيخين

This hadith is sahih upon the standard of the two Shaykhs.24

Imam al–Dhahabi concurs:

على شرط البخاري ومسلم

(Sahih) upon the standard of al–Bukhari and Muslim.25

Imam al–Tirmidhi (d. 279 H) has documented a similar chain:

حدثنا ابن أبي عمر حدثنا سفيان عن ابن أبي نجيح عن مجاهد عن أبي معمر عن ابن مسعود


Al–Tirmidhi says:

هذا حديث حسن صحيح

This hadith is hasan sahih.27

‘Allamah al–Albani agrees too:

صحيح

Sahih28

Imam Abu Ya’la (d. 307 H) records as well:
Haditha is among the narrations of ‘Abd Allah b. Abi Najih – Mujahid – Ibn ‘Abbas. Shaykh Dr. Asad comments:

إسناده صحيح

Its chain is *sahih*.

And finally, Imam Ibn Khuzaymah (d. 311 H) has documented this chain in his *Sahih* too:


Shaykh Dr. al-A’zami states:

إسناده صحيح

Its chain is *sahih.*

At this point, it is needless to prove that Mujahid, the last narrator of *Hadith al-Ikhtiyar* – was also *thiqah* (trustworthy). However, we shall still do so, in case there is someone who prefers that. Al-Hafiz says about him:

مجاهد بن جبر يفتح الجيم وسكون الموحدة أبو الحجاج المخزومي مولاه المكي ثقة إمام في التفسير وفي العلم


With this, it becomes absolutely proven that *Hadith al-Ikhtiyar* is *sahih*. All its narrators are *thiqah* (trustworthy), and there is no disconnection whatsoever in the chain. The *hadith* establishes that Allah chose only Muhammad and ‘Ali – in a special selection – out of all the people of the earth. It is clear from the text that Allah had not chosen anyone else among them before He chose the two. As such, whatever other selections were made by Him, apparently, came after this first, unique selection.
The Qur’an makes it absolutely clear that creation and choosing are *exclusive* divine functions:

وَرَبِّ يَخْلِقُ مَا يَشَاء وَيُخَرُّ مَا كَانَ لَهُمْ خَيْرَةَ

And your Lord creates whatever He wills, **and He chooses**. They have no right to choose.\(^{34}\)

Among those He chose was His Messenger, Musa:

وَأَنَا اَخْتَرُتُكُمْ فَاسْتَمِعُوا لِمَا يَوُيُّ

And I have chosen you. So listen to that which is inspired to you.\(^{35}\)

He equally chose the Israelites:

وَلَوْلَدَ اَخْتَرَنَاهُمْ عَلَى عَلَمِ الْعَالَمِينَ

And We had knowingly **chosen them above the worlds**.\(^{36}\)

The chosen ones, of course, are also the best:

وَإِنَّهُمْ عِنْدَنَا لَمِنَ الْمَصْطُفِينَ الْأَخْيَرِ

And with Us, they are verily from **the chosen ones, the best**.\(^{37}\)

So, when Allah chose His Messenger and Amir al-Muminin out of all the people of the earth, He was basically declaring them both as the best of all. Since Abu Bakr, ‘Umar, and ‘Uthman were alive at that time, it is obvious that both Muhammad and ‘Ali were better than them, by Allah’s Own Decree. These facts are *very* uncomfortable to mainstream Sunni teachings, and pose an existential threat to Sunni Islam as a whole.

If the *khilafah* of Abu Bakr collapses, nothing else can survive from the Sunni *madhhab*. This is why Sunnis generally feel very uneasy about *Hadith al-Ikhtiyar*. Perhaps, it is also why ‘Allamah al-Albani grades the authentic *hadith* in this manner:

مَوْضِعٌ

*Mawdu’* (fabricated)\(^{38}\)
Fabricated?! By who? By the *thiqah* (trustworthy) narrators?! Then, our ‘Allamah states:

روى من حديث أبي هريرة، وعبد الله بن عباس، وأبي أيوب الأنصاري، وعلى الهلال، ومعقل بن يسار.


Five Sahabah! That is enough to make it *mutawatir* by the standards of some Sunni *muhadithun*! What exactly is the problem with our dear ‘Allamah al-Albani? The worst part of it all is that the ‘Allamah – whether deliberately or by mistake – omits the *sanad* of al-Ma’mari above in his extensive discussion against the authenticity of the *hadith*!

This, of course, makes it possible for him to reject it! However, if he had included that *sahih* chain in his analysis, the story would have been far different. It is unclear how the ‘Allamah misses that *sanad* of al-Ma’mari, despite that he has quoted other chains of the same *hadith* from the same *Mu’jam al-Kabir* of al-Tabarani! In any case, ‘Allamah al-Albani’s verdict upon the *hadith* is based upon incomplete research. As such, it is void.

Sadly, our ‘Allamah takes things even more disturbing levels – to an all-time low – with this comment of his over a chain that has some common names with that of al-Ma’mari:

 ولو أنثه ثبت عنه؛ لبقي فيه علة أخرى تقدح في صحته، وهي احتمال أن يكون هذا الحديث أيضاً مما أدخله ابن أخي معمر في كتاب معمر؛ فإنه كان رافضياً

Even if it is established from him (i.e. ‘Abd al-Razzaq), there is still another defect in it which discredits its authenticity. It is the *possibility* that this *hadith* too is one of those things which the nephew of Ma’mar inserted into the books of Ma’mar, for he (that nephew) was a Rafidhi.

Possibility?! Mere conjecture? So, there is no concrete evidence? But even then, no such possibility *ever* exists, to begin with! We will simply round off this chapter with this angry reply of the Sunni *hadith* master, ‘Allamah al-Maghribi:

قلت : هذا كلام باطل جداً، وبينان ذلك: أن ابن أخي معمر، شخص وهمي لا يوجد له، ولا يعرف أخ لمعمر، وكيف يوجد ابن بدون أب، غير عيسى عليه السلام؟

I say: This is complete nonsense! The reason for this is: *That nephew of Ma’mar was only an imaginary figure. He never existed!* Ma’mar was not known to have any brother. How could a son exist without a father, apart from ‘Isa, peace be upon him?

2. Abu al-Husayn Muslim b. al-Hajjaj al-Qushayri al-Naysaburi, Ṣahih Muslim (Beirut: Dar Ihya al-Turath al-'Arabi) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad 'Abd al-Baqi], vol. 4, p. 1879, # 2414 (47)


4. Ibid

5. Ibid

6. Qur'an 48:26

7. Qur'an 48:18

8. Qur'an 49:15


15. Ibid


21. Abu 'abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al-Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Mubassassat Qurtubah) [annotator: Shu'ayb al-Arnaut], vol. 4, p. 242, # 18138

22. Ibid


24. Ibid

25. Ibid


27. Ibid

28. Ibid


30. Ibid
Bibliography


Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al–Shaybani, Fadhail al–Sahabah (Beirut: Muasassat al–Risalah; 1403 H) [annotator: Dr. Wasiyullah Muhammad ‘Abbas]

Abu ‘Abd Allah Ahmad b. Hanbal al–Shaybani, Musnad (Cairo: Muasassat Qububah) [annotator: Shu’ayb al–Arna‘ut]


Abu Dawud Sulayman b. al-As’ath al-Sijistani al-Azdi, *Sunan* (Dar al-Fikr) [annotator: Muhammad Nasir al-Din al-Albani]


Tadlis (Jordan: Maktabah al-Manar; 1st edition) [annotator: Dr. Asim b. ‘Abd Allah al-Qaryuni]


Ibn Majah Abu ‘Abd Allah Muhammad b. Yazid al–Qazwini, Sunan (Dar al–Fikr) [annotator: Muhammad Fuad ‘Abd al–Baqi]


Source URL: https://www.al-islam.org/ali-best-sahabah-toyib-olawuyi

Links